

---

This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

<https://books.google.com>



Princeton University Library



32101 055466799

# MILITARY HANDBOOKS

ORIGINALLY EDITED BY

MAJ.-GEN. C. B. BRACKENBURY

---

# MILITARY LAW

---

LTCOL. SISSEON C. PRATT R.A.

**RESERVED**

R. Room S. Stock,  
Brown's Course

Library of



Princeton University.





***MILITARY HANDBOOKS FOR OFFICERS  
AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS***

***VOL. V.  
MILITARY LAW.***

## **UNIFORM WITH THE PRESENT VOLUME.**

---

**THE ELEMENTS OF MODERN TACTICS.** Practically Applied to English Formations. By Colonel WILKINSON SHAW. With 32 Plates and Maps. Eleventh Edition, revised throughout. Small crown 8vo. 9s. net.

**THE ELEMENTS OF MILITARY ADMINISTRATION.** FIRST PART: Permanent System of Administration.

By Major J. W. BUXTON. Small crown 8vo. 7s. 6d.

**FIELD ARTILLERY:** its Equipment, Organisation, and Tactics. By Lieut.-Col. SISSON C. PRATT, late R.A. Sixth Edition. Revised and brought up to date by Lieut.-Colonel EDEN BAKER. Small crown 8vo. 6s.

**FIELD WORKS:** their Technical Construction and Tactical Application. By the Editor, Major-General C. B. BRACKENBURY, R.A. With Appendices and 19 Plates. Small crown 8vo. In Two Parts. 12s.

**ARMY SERVICE CORPS DUTIES IN PEACE AND IN WAR.** Compiled and Arranged by Colonel Sir E. W. D. WARD, C.B. Edited by Captain WALTER H. JAMES. Small crown 8vo. 6s.

**STUDIES IN MAP READING AND FIELD SKETCHING.** By Colonel WILKINSON SHAW. Small crown 8vo. 6s. net.

**TACTICAL OPERATIONS FOR FIELD OFFICERS.** By Colonel WILKINSON SHAW. With numerous maps. Small crown 8vo. 7s. 6d. net.

**HOW TO PASS IN TOPOGRAPHY.** By Major G. W. REDWAY. Letters to a Young Officer on Map Reading and Military Sketching. With 10 coloured Maps. 7s. 6d. net.

**THE MILITIA OFFICER'S INSTRUCTOR.** By Major G. W. REDWAY. Crown 8vo. 4s. 6d. net.

**QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS FOR CAVALRY NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.** By Colonel G. CROLE WYNDHAM, C.B. Crown 8vo. 2s. 6d. net.

**WHAT TO KNOW FOR THE "C" EXAMINATION.** By Captain J. C. HARDING NEWMAN. F'cap 8vo., illustrated. Price 3s. 6d. net.

---

**KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO.**

# MILITARY LAW

ITS PROCEDURE AND PRACTICE

BY

LIEUT.-COLONEL SISSON C.<sup>o</sup> PRATT  
(LATE) ROYAL ARTILLERY

BEING THE FIFTH VOLUME OF  
**Military Handbooks**  
FOR OFFICERS AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS

ORIGINALLY EDITED BY  
MAJOR-GENERAL C. B. BRACKENBURY, R.A.  
LATE SUPERINTENDING OFFICER OF GARRISON INSTRUCTION

EIGHTEENTH EDITION  
REVISED AND CORRECTED UP TO NOVEMBER, 1910

LONDON

KEGAN PAUL, TRENCH, TRÜBNER & CO., LTD.  
DRYDEN HOUSE, GERRARD STREET, W.

1910

**PRINTED BY  
THE EAST OF ENGLAND PRINTING WORKS  
LONDON AND NORWICH**

*(The rights of translation and of reproduction are reserved)*

## PREFACE TO THE EIGHTEENTH EDITION

---

Where great changes are made in the organisation of an army it is difficult to apply the new legislation to exceptional cases.

The Militia of the United Kingdom were called out for the last time in 1908, and the Militia Reserve has been extinct for some years. At the same time there still remain the Channel Islands, Malta, and Bermuda Militia, and a few officers and men who are still bound by their former commissions and engagements.

The Volunteer Service, as a whole, has ceased to exist, but yet there are the Volunteers of Bermuda and the Isle of Man, and a few individuals who have not yet either resigned, been discharged, or absorbed in the Reserve or Territorial Forces. As a general result, the legal enactments as to Militia, Yeomanry, and Volunteers, and most of the references made to them in the official books are practically obsolete.

The enactments and provisions of the present Military Law are contained in the Army Act, the Reserve Forces Acts, the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act of 1907, and the Rules of Procedure. Notes to the above, marginal references, indexes, and chapters in the Official Manual are useful and generally correct guides in assisting an officer to form an opinion, but they are *not law*. In distinction to matters of Law there are matters of Regulation, contained for the most part in the King's Regulations, Royal Warrants,

17651

19 NOV -31915 351137  
Digitized by Google

RECAP

Army Orders, and the Regulations for the Reserve and Territorial Forces.

A regulation may restrict the application of a law, but cannot alter it, and when law and regulation come in conflict, it is obvious that the latter must give way.

Regulations are not drawn up by lawyers, and must not be construed too literally. To quibble over the exact meaning of a word in a paragraph of the King's Regulations or of an Army Order is very apt to lead to error.

When a doubt arises as to the application of the law in any particular case, it is referred to the Judge-Advocate-General for his opinion, and this opinion, when officially expressed, practically settles the view to be taken. In matters of regulation the official decision of the Army Council is equally conclusive. An official interpretation of a law or regulation, when once given, puts an end to argument or criticism on the point involved.

Officers preparing for Promotion or other examination will find it an advantage to use the 'Military Law Examiner' in combination with this book.

I shall be glad at any time to give my opinion on debatable points of military law to officers who write to me and enclose a stamped and directed envelope.

S. C. PRATT,  
*Lieut.-Colonel.*

Charminster, Dorset.

*1st November, 1910.*

## ABBREVIATIONS USED

---

M. v 72	..	'Manual of Military Law,' Chapter 5, paragraph 72.
M. 775	..	'Manual of Military Law,' page 775.
S. 5	..	Section 5, Army Act.
T.F.A. 10	..	Section 10, Territorial and Reserve Forces Act.
R.F.A. 20	..	Section 20, Reserve Forces Act.
R. 30	..	Rule 30, Rules of Procedure.
K. 400	..	Para. 400, King's Regulations.
A.O. 26/88	..	Army Order, No. 26 of 1888.
T.R. 200	..	Para. 200, Territorial Force Regulations.
S.R. 20	..	Para. 20, Special Reserve Regulations.
P.W. 582	..	Para. 582, Pay Warrant.
Sm. 100	..	Para. 100 of Simmons' 'Court-Martial,' Seventh Edition.
O'D 45	..	Page 45 of O'Dowd's 'Hints to Court-Martial,' Second Edition.
Cl 190	..	Page 190, Clode's 'Military Forces of the Crown,' First Edition.
Ho. 180	..	Page 180, Hough's 'Precedents,' First Edition.
Sth. 15	..	Article 15, Stephen's 'Digest of the Law of Evidence,' Fourth Edition.

The large-sized figures in the margin refer to paragraphs on other pages.



## CONTENTS

---

	PAGE
DEFINITIONS . . . . .	xxi

### CHAPTER I

#### *HISTORY OF MILITARY LAW*

1. MILITARY LAW. 2. CIVIL LAW—Statute Law— COMMON LAW. 3. CIVIL <i>versus</i> MILITARY LAW. 4. ORIGIN OF ARTICLES OF WAR. 5. THE FIRST MUTINY ACT. 6. ORIGIN OF COURTS-MARTIAL . . . . .	1
---	---

### CHAPTER II

#### *THE MILITARY CODE, AND PERSONS SUBJECT TO IT*

7. THE MILITARY CODE. 8. ARMY ANNUAL ACT. 9. ARMY ACT OF 1881—ITS CONTENTS. 10. ARTICLES OF WAR—Indian Articles of War. 11. RULES OF PROCEDURE. 12. KING'S REGU- LATIONS. 13. ROYAL WARRANTS. 14. GENERAL ORDERS AND ARMY CIRCULARS. 15. ARMY ORDERS. 16. ORDERS IN COUNCIL. 17. OTHER ACTS—Railway Acts—Regimental Debts Act —Regulation of Forces Act—Acts affecting the Reserve and Territorial Forces. 18. PERSONS SUBJECT TO MILITARY LAW—Regular and Reserve Forces—Territorial Forces—Indian and Colonial Forces—Civilians . . . . .	8
---	---

## CHAPTER III

*MILITARY CUSTODY*

19. MILITARY CUSTODY—Offences against—No Duty while in—Informal Custody—Detention in Custody—Ordering into custody.	20. CLOSE AND OPEN ARREST.	21. ORDERING ARREST OF OFFICER.	22. REPORT OF ARREST.	23. REFUSAL OR APPEAL.	24. RELEASE FROM ARREST.	25. ARREST OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.	26. ARREST OF WARRANT OFFICERS.	27. PRIVILEGE FROM ARREST.	28. WRONGFUL ARREST.	29. ARREST OF SOLDIERS—The Gaoler—On the March—Treatment of Minor Offences—When Crime is Confessed.	30. FORWARDING THE CHARGE.	31. REPORT OF COMMITTAL—Non-delivery of Charge.	32. RELEASE FROM CONFINEMENT . . . . .	15
---	----------------------------	---------------------------------	-----------------------	------------------------	--------------------------	--	---------------------------------	----------------------------	----------------------	---	----------------------------	---	--	----

## CHAPTER IV

*INVESTIGATION OF CHARGES*

33. INVESTIGATION.	34. CHARGE AGAINST AN OFFICER.	35. CHARGE AGAINST A WARRANT AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER.	36. CHARGE AGAINST A SOLDIER—Evidence—Summary of Evidence.	37. DISPOSAL OF OFFENCE—Summary Disposal—Application for Court-martial .	23
--------------------	--------------------------------	--	--	--	----

## CHAPTER V

*POWERS OF COMMANDING OFFICER*

38. THE COMMANDING OFFICER.	39. HIS JURISDICTION.	40. DETENTION UP TO TWENTY-EIGHT DAYS.	41. FIELD PUNISHMENT.	42. FINES FOR DRUNKENNESS—Punishment—Combined Offences.	
-----------------------------	-----------------------	--	-----------------------	---	--

43. DEPRIVATION OF PAY.	44. FORFEITURE OF G.C. BADGES.	45. STOPPAGES.	46. MINOR PUNISHMENTS.	47. COMBINED PUNISHMENTS.	48. PUNISHMENTS OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS— No Minor Punishments—Resignation of Rank.	49. WARRANT OFFICERS.	50. AWARDING PUNISHMENT —Illegal Award.	51. TRIAL BY COURT-MARTIAL.	52. ONLY ONE TRIAL.	53. POWER OF COMPANY OFFICERS.	54. OFFICERS ON DETACHMENT	. . . . .	29
-------------------------	-----------------------------------	----------------	---------------------------	---------------------------	---	--------------------------	--	-----------------------------	---------------------	-----------------------------------	----------------------------	-----------	----

## CHAPTER VI

### *JURISDICTION OF COURTS-MARTIAL*

55. COURTS-MARTIAL—Three Ordinary—One Excep- tional.	56. THEIR JURISDICTION.	57. AS TO PLACE—On Board Ship—Ship in Commission.	58. AS TO TIME—Exceptional Cases.	59. AS TO OFFENCES—Civil Offences—The Courts Used.	60. AS TO OFFENDERS.	61. IN CONFLICT WITH CIVIL LAW.	62. SECOND TRIALS	. . . . .	43
---	-------------------------	--	-----------------------------------	---	----------------------	------------------------------------	-------------------	-----------	----

## CHAPTER VII

### *COMPOSITION OF COURTS-MARTIAL*

63. COMPOSITION OF COURTS.	64. QUALIFICATIONS OF MEMBERS—Rank—Branch of Service—Dis- qualification.	65. QUALIFICATION OF PRESI- DENT—A Combatant Officer.	66. DUTIES OF PRESIDENT—As to Charges—Evidence—Votes— Summoning Witnesses—Clearing Court.	67. FORMATION OF COURTS	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	. . . . .	51
----------------------------	--	--	---	----------------------------	-----------	-----------	-----------	-----------	----

## CHAPTER VIII

### *THE PROSECUTOR AND JUDGE-ADVOCATE*

68. THE PROSECUTOR—Swearing of—Absence of —Objection to—Privileges of—As Witness.	69.
--	-----

DUTIES OF PROSECUTOR.	70.	COUNSEL AS PROSECUTOR.	71.	JUDGE-ADVOCATE—Qualification of—Swearing of—Absence of—Objection to—Presence in Closed Court—As Witness.	72.	CIVILIAN JUDGE-ADVOCATE.	73.	DUTIES OF JUDGE-ADVOCATE—Summing up—Summoning Witnesses—Examining Witnesses—Recording Proceedings—Custody and Transmission of Proceedings.	74.	JUDGE-ADVOCATE GENERAL'S DEPARTMENT—Care of Proceedings . . . . .	58
-----------------------	-----	------------------------	-----	--	-----	--------------------------	-----	--	-----	---	----

## CHAPTER IX

### *ASSEMBLY OF COURTS-MARTIAL*

75.	PRELIMINARY PROCEEDINGS.	76.	APPLICATION FOR COURT-MARTIAL.	77.	DELAY IN ASSEMBLY.
78.	CONVENING AUTHORITY.	79.	WARRANTS—Delegated Warrants.	80.	DUTY OF CONVENING OFFICER—Charges—Summary or Abstract of Evidence—Witnesses—Nature of Court—Order Assembling Court—Appointing Officers.
81.	WARNING THE ACCUSED.	82.	ASSEMBLY OF COURT—Seating of Members—Preliminaries.	83.	HOUR OF SITTING.
84.	LEGAL INQUIRIES BY COURT.	85.	THE ACCUSED . . . . .	66	

## CHAPTER X

### *CHALLENGES—ARRAIGNMENT OF ACCUSED*

86.	CHALLENGE BY ACCUSED—Trial of Several Persons.	87.	VOTING ON OBJECTION.	88.	OBJECTION TO MEMBER—To Interpreter.
89.	OBJECTION TO PRESIDENT.	90.	LIMITS TO OBJECTIONS.	91.	GROUNDS FOR CHALLENGE.
92.	SWEARING-IN OF COURT—Trial of Several Persons.	93.	ARRAIGNMENT OF PERSONS ACCUSED—Joint Arraignment Claim for Separate Trial.	94.	PLEA

TO JURISDICTION OF COURT. 95. PLEA IN BAR OF TRIAL. 96. PLEADING TO CHARGE . . . . .	76
--	----

## CHAPTER XI

### *PROCEDURE AT TRIAL*

97. PROCEEDINGS ON PLEA OF NOT GUILTY. 98. ADDRESSES—First—Second. 99. PROSECUTOR'S ADDRESS. 100. ADDRESS OF ACCUSED. 101. ORDER OF ADDRESSES—Accused Calls Witnesses—Does not Call Them—Joint Trials. 102. RECORDING ADDRESSES. 103. EMPLOYMENT OF COUNSEL—Statement by Accused. 104. PROCEDURE IN SIMPLE CASES. 104a. INCIDENTS DURING TRIAL—Adjournments—Absence of President, Member, Accused, Prosecutor and Judge-Advocate . . . . .	83
--	----

## CHAPTER XII

### *PLEA OF GUILTY AND PARTLY GUILTY*

105. PROCEEDINGS ON PLEA OF GUILTY—Exceptional Case—Warning to Accused—Finding of Guilty. 106. STATEMENT BY ACCUSED. 107. TAKING EVIDENCE—As to Character—In Mitigation. 108. PLEAS OF GUILTY AND NOT GUILTY—Procedure	94
--	----

## CHAPTER XIII

### *THE DEFENCE*

109. THE DEFENCE—Friend of Accused. 110. HELP FROM PRESIDENT. 111. DUTY OF COURT. 112. PLEAS AVAILABLE. 113. REMARKS ON PLEAS—Insanity—Compulsion—Condonation—Misfortune—Ignorance—Drunkenness . . . . .	98
--	----

## CHAPTER XIV

*THE FINDING*

	PAGE
114. CLOSING THE COURT. 115. DELIBERATION—Recalling Witnesses—Adjournment. 116. VOTING. 117. FINDING—Validity of Conviction—Military <i>versus</i> Civil Courts. 118. ‘NOT GUILTY’—Honourable Acquittal. 119. SPECIAL FINDING—On Alternative Charges—Of Insanity—Of Cognate Offences . . . . .	103

## CHAPTER XV

*PROCEEDINGS BEFORE SENTENCE*

120. RE-OPENING COURT. 121. EVIDENCE TAKEN—Previous Convictions—Right of Accused. 122. CIVIL CONVICTIONS. 123. EVIDENCE TO CHARACTER. 124. TRIAL OF OFFICERS AND WARRANT OFFICERS. 125. CLOSING COURT . . . . .	110
---	-----

## CHAPTER XVI

*THE SENTENCE*

126. AMOUNT OF PUNISHMENT—Common Errors—Character of Offence—Attendant Circumstances. 127. VOTING ON SENTENCE—Nature of Punishment—Amount of Punishment. 128. COMMENCEMENT OF SENTENCE—Combined Sentence. 129. WORDING. 130. ONE SENTENCE. 131. JOINT TRIALS. 132. RECOMMENDATION TO MERCY. 133. REMARKS BY COURT. 134. FORWARDING PROCEEDINGS—Original Proceedings. 135. CUSTODY OF PROCEEDINGS . . . . .	113
--	-----

## CHAPTER XVII

*CONFIRMATION*

	PAGE
136. CONFIRMATION. 137. CONFIRMING OFFICER— Not a Member—On Board Ship—Trial of Marines.	
138. POWER OF CONFIRMING OFFICER—Mitiga- tion—Remission—Commutation—Restitution of Stolen Property. 139. REVISION—Only Once— Absence of Members—Revising Finding—Revis- ing Sentence. 140. IRREGULARITY IN PROCEED- INGS. 141. CONFIRMATION IN ERROR. 142. CON- FIRMATION OF FINDING—Finding of Insanity.	
143. NON-CONFIRMATION OF FINDING. 144. CONFIRMATION OF SENTENCE. 145. SPECIAL CONFIRMATION. 146. REMARKS OF CONFIR- MING OFFICER. 147. REFUSAL OF CONFIRMATION.	
148. OVERRULING OF CONFIRMING OFFICER.	
149. PROMULGATION OF PROCEEDINGS—Forward- ing of. 150. CORRECTION OF PROCEEDINGS.	
151. LOSS OF PROCEEDINGS . . . . .	122

## CHAPTER XVIII

*CRIMES AND PUNISHMENTS*

152. OFFENCES PUNISHABLE BY MILITARY AND CIVIL COURTS AND OFFENCES OF RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES . . . . .	137
--	-----

## CHAPTER XIX

*CRIMES*

153. CLASSIFICATION OF OFFENCES. 154. FORCING A SAFEGUARD. 155. MUTINY—Limitation as to Trial. 156. INSUBORDINATION. 157. SEDITION. 158. VIOLENCE TO A SUPERIOR—Superior Officer	
---	--

—Offer of Violence—Execution of his Office.	159.
INSUBORDINATE LANGUAGE.	160.
DISOBEYING LAWFUL COMMAND—Lawful Command—Military Command—Neglect of Orders . . . . .	151

## CHAPTER XX

### *CRIMES (continued)*

161. DESERTION—Judged by Time—Judged by Distance—Limitation as to Trial. 162. RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES. 163. DESERTION ON FURLough. 164. ATTEMPTING TO DESERT—Persuading to Desert—Assisting to Desert. 165. PROOF OF DESERTION. 166. VARIATION IN FINDING. 167. PENALTIES ON CONVICTION—Forfeitures—Restoration. 168. REPEATED OFFENCES. 169. PROCEDURE AS TO DESERTERS. 170. FRAUDULENT ENLISTMENT—Limitation Clause. 171. ATTEMPTING FRAUDULENT ENLISTMENT. 172. REPEATED OFFENCES. 173. DISPENSATION WITH TRIAL. 174. FALSE ANSWER ON ATTESTATION. 175. ILLEGAL ENLISTMENT. 176. ABSENCE WITHOUT LEAVE—On Furlough—Breaking out of Barracks. 177. OVER TWENTY-ONE DAYS—Not Desertion. 178. UNDER TWENTY-ONE DAYS. 179. RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES—Assisting a Man to Absent Himself. 180. TRIAL BY CIVIL COURT . . . . . 160

## CHAPTER XXI

### *CRIMES (continued)*

181. SCANDALOUS CONDUCT. 182. EMBEZZLEMENT—Fraudulently Misapplying—Stealing. 183. DISGRACEFUL CONDUCT—Theft—From Soldier—From Civilian. 184. DRUNKENNESS—No Excuse. 185. OF OFFICER—Of Non-commissioned Officer—Of Soldier. 186. JURISDICTION OF COURT—Simple

Offences. 187. MAKING AWAY WITH KIT. 188.	
FALSE STATEMENTS. 189. CONTEMPT OF COURT— Of Soldier—Of Civilian—Of Accused—Of Counsel.	
190. FALSE EVIDENCE. 191. CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER. 192. CIVIL OF- FENCES . . . . .	175

## CHAPTER XXII

*PUNISHMENTS*

193. PUNISHMENTS—Civil Offences—Gradation of.	
194. SCALE OF PUNISHMENTS—Warrant Officers.	
195. EXECUTION OF SENTENCE. 196. PUNISH- MENT OF OFFICER. 197. CASHIERING AND DIS- MISSAL. 198. FORFEITURE OF RANK—Honorary Rank—Medals. 199. REPRIMAND. 200. DEATH.	
201. PENAL SERVITUDE. 202. IMPRISONMENT. 203. DISCHARGE. 204. REDUCTION. 205. FORFEITURES.	
206. FORFEITURE ON CONVICTION—Forfeiture of Pay. 207. FINES. 208. STOPPAGES—As to Kit— As to Property—As to Moneys. 209. PENAL STOPPAGES—Of Officer—Of Soldier. 210. FIELD PUNISHMENT. 211. COMBINING PUNISHMENTS.	
212. COMMUTING PUNISHMENTS . . . . .	187

## CHAPTER XXIII

*CHARGES*

213. CHARGE SHEET—Description of Accused. 214. CHARGE—Statement—Particulars. 215. PERSON MAKING THE CHARGE. 216. FRAMING CHARGES— Distinct Offences—Time of Offence—Place of Offence—Loss or Damage—Words Used—Un- necessary Particulars. 217. SEVERAL CHARGES.	
218. DEFECTIVE CHARGES. 219. ALTERNATIVE CHARGES. 220. JOINT CHARGES. 221. ALTERING CHARGES. 222. SEPARATE CHARGE SHEETS. 223. USE OF SEPARATE CHARGE SHEETS . . . . .	204

## CHAPTER XXIV

## WITNESSES

	PAGE
224. SUMMONING OF WITNESSES. 225. ISSUE OF SUMMONS—To Soldiers under Sentence—Neglect to Summon a Witness. 226. SERVING OF SUMMONS. 227. EXEMPTION FROM SUMMONS. 228. DISOBEYING A SUMMONS. 229. PRIVILEGE OF WITNESS FROM ARREST—Non-attendance of Witness. 230. EXPENSES OF WITNESS. 231. COMPETENCY OF WITNESSES—Compellable Witnesses. 232. CREDIBILITY OF WITNESSES. 233. OATH OF WITNESS—Refusal to be Sworn. 234. PROSECUTOR AS WITNESS. 235. MEMBER AS WITNESS. 236. PROSECUTOR'S WITNESSES. 237. WITNESSES OF ACCUSED. 238. WITNESSES IN COURT. 239. EXAMINATION OF WITNESS—Cross-examination—Re-examination. 240. EXAMINATION IN CHIEF—Leading Questions—When Admissible—Refreshing Memory. 241. CROSS-EXAMINATION—Leading Questions—Irrelevant Questions—Degrading Questions—As to Previous Statements. 242. QUESTIONING WITNESS—Reply Correcting Evidence. 243. PRIVILEGE AS TO ANSWERS—Criminating Answers—Degrading Answers—Professional Secrets—Official Secrets—Husband and Wife. 244. CONTRADICTION OF ANSWERS. 245. IMPEACHING CREDIBILITY OF WITNESSES. 246. CONTEMPT OF COURT . . . 214	

## CHAPTER XXV

## EVIDENCE

247. INTRODUCTORY REMARKS. 248. EVIDENCE—Direct—Circumstantial. 249. FACTS NOT REQUIRING PROOF. 250. FACTS REQUIRING PROOF—Substance of Charge—Special Findings. 251.	
---	--

THE BURDEN OF PROOF—Presumption—Of Criminal Intent—Of Theft—Other Presumptions.	252.
RULES OF EVIDENCE. 253. RULE OF RELEVANCY—Offences connected together—Facts showing Intention—Facts showing Motive—Cases of Conspiracy—General Disposition—Character.	254.
RULE OF BEST EVIDENCE—One Witness sufficient—Secondary Evidence—Depositions—Documentary Evidence—Public Documents—Private Documents.	255.
RULE AS TO HEARSAY—Dying Declarations—Statements as part of <i>res gestae</i> —Summary of Evidence—Public Documents.	256.
RULE AS TO OPINION—How far Admissible—Experts.	257.
ADMISSIONS. 258. CONFESSIONS—When Involuntary—When Voluntary—Proof of Facts revealed—Previous Confessions.	259.
REMARKS . . . . .	233

## CHAPTER XXVI

### *FIELD GENERAL COURTS-MARTIAL*

260. FIELD GENERAL COURTS-MARTIAL—Provost Marshals.	261. CONVENING OF COURT.	262.							
COMPOSITION OF COURT.	263. GENERAL PROCEDURE.	264. CHALLENGE.	265. SWEARING COURT.	266. CHARGE.	267. PLEA.	268. EVIDENCE.	269. FINDING.	270. SENTENCE.	271.
CONFIRMATION.	272. GENERAL PROVISIONS . . . . .	253							

## CHAPTER XXVII

### *COURTS OF INQUIRY*

273. COURTS OF INQUIRY—Composition—Procedure—Inquiry affecting Character, Stores, Injuries, Prisoners of War.	274. COURT ON ILLEGAL ABSENCE.	275. COURTS OF INQUEST.	276.
BOARDS . . . . .	260		

## CHAPTER XXVIII

*MARTIAL LAW AND CUSTOMS OF WAR*

	PAGE
277. MARTIAL LAW—In the Home Territory—As part of the Laws of War—Example. 278. LAW OF RIOT. 279. CUSTOMS OF WAR . . . . .	265

## CHAPTER XXIX

*MISCELLANEOUS REGULATIONS*

280. REDRESS OF WRONGS. 281. RECORDING OF FENCES—Regimental Conduct Book—Company Conduct Book. 282. LAW OF ENLISTMENT. 283. BILLETING AND IMPRESSION OF CARRIAGES . . . . .	275
--	-----

INDEX . . . . .	281
-----------------	-----

## *DEFINITIONS*

*Active Service*.—A force is on active service when it is engaged in operations against the enemy, or is engaged in military operations in a country or place occupied by an enemy ; or is in military occupation of a foreign country.

*Army Reserve*.—A force composed of men who have left the colours and re-entered into civil life, but who are liable, for the residue of the term of their original enlistment, to be recalled to the colours. Men who have not served in the regular forces but who are enlisted into the first class of the Army Reserve form the body called the Special Reserve.

*Attestation* consists in appearing before a justice, answering certain questions in the attestation paper, and making and signing a declaration as to the truth of the answers, and taking the oath of allegiance.

*Beyond the Seas*.—Out of the United Kingdom, the Channel Islands, and the Isle of Man.

*Colony*.—Any part of H.M. dominions exclusive of the British Islands and British India, and includes Cyprus and any British Protectorate.

*Company*.—In the King's Regulations the term ‘company, &c.’ will be understood to mean ‘squadron, troop, battery or company’.

*Court of Summary Jurisdiction*.—A Court consisting of two Justices of the Peace, or one police or stipendiary magistrate, or persons similarly qualified.

*Detention*.—A punishment awarded to soldiers for purely military offences. It does not involve hard labour nor bear the stigma of imprisonment.

*Discharged with Disgrace*.—Discharged, with ignominy, as incorrigible and worthless, for misconduct,

or on account of conviction for felony or of a sentence of penal servitude.

*Enemy* includes all armed mutineers, armed rebels, armed rioters, and pirates.

*Equipment* includes any article issued to a soldier for his use or entrusted to his care for military purposes.

*Exemplary manner* means that a man has no entry in his regimental conduct-sheet for a continuous period of three years.

*Foreign Country*.—Any place out of the United Kingdom, a colony, or India, and not on the high seas.

*Furlough*.—Leave of absence for periods exceeding six days, granted to non-commissioned officers and men.

*Line of March*.—Troops are on the line of march during the whole period of time between the date of departure and the date of arrival at destination.

*Military Convict*.—A person sentenced by court-martial to penal servitude.

*Military Prisoner*.—A person sentenced by court-martial to imprisonment.

*Month*.—In the Army Act and every Act of Parliament, a calendar month. In other documents, a lunar month. But a month in a sentence of imprisonment, detention or field punishment means, unless the contrary is expressed, a calendar month.

*Provost Marshal*.—An officer appointed *abroad* by the general in command, whose duty is to arrest and detain offenders and carry out the sentences of courts-martial. At permanent camps *at home* he is the quarter master of the corps of military police.

*Regular Forces*.—Those forces that are liable to continuous military service in any part of the world, and include, subject to modifications, the Indian

forces, Marines, Malta artillery, and Reserve Forces when called out on permanent service.

*Reserve Forces*.—The Army Reserve and the Special Reserve, which forms part of the first-class of the Army Reserve.

*Requisition of Emergency*.—When a state of emergency is declared to exist, an officer in command, not below field rank, may be authorised to issue a requisition requiring Justices of the Peace to issue warrants for the provision of such animals, vessels, or carriage as may be required, and when a proclamation ordering the Army Reserve to be called out *on permanent service* is in force, the means of transport may, if necessary, be purchased or forcibly acquired instead of being hired.

*Route*.—An order for the movement of troops or individual soldiers.

*Soldier*.—Subject to the modifications in the Act, this term includes non-commissioned officers and warrant officers not holding an honorary commission, and every person subject to military law, with the exception of officers.

*Summary Conviction*.—Conviction by a court of summary jurisdiction, and does not refer to the summary award of a commanding officer, or to any other military proceeding.

*Superior Court*.—The High Court of Justice in England and Ireland and the Court of Session in Scotland.

*Warrant Officers* hold their appointments by warrant under the hand and seal of the Secretary of State. If holding an honorary commission they rank as officers.

*Year*.—Twelve calendar months.



# MILITARY LAW

---

## CHAPTER I

### *HISTORY OF MILITARY LAW*

1. MILITARY LAW. 2. CIVIL LAW—Statute Law—Common Law. 3. CIVIL *versus* MILITARY LAW. 4. ORIGIN OF ARTICLES OF WAR. 5. THE FIRST MUTINY ACT. 6. ORIGIN OF COURTS-MARTIAL.
1. MILITARY LAW.—In order to maintain proper discipline in the army, it has been found necessary to confer special powers on the military authorities to enable them to deal with offences which it would be either dangerous or impossible to leave to the civil power.

The military law which governs the soldier in M. iii. peace and in war, at all times and in all places, is regular in its procedure, is administered according to an authorised code, and deals only with soldiers and persons who are from circumstances subjected to the same law as soldiers. The term 'military law' is frequently used in a wider sense, to include not only the disciplinary, but also the administrative law of the army, as, for instance, the law of enlistment and billeting.

It is embodied in the Army Act, which is part of the statute law of England, and is judicially recognised by all civil courts.

The administration of the code is simplified by means of Rules of Procedure, Regulations, and

Orders, which lay down the manner in which the law is to be carried out by the military courts.

The principles of civil law are as far as possible observed, but its technicalities are laid aside.

- 2. CIVIL LAW.**—The civil law of the realm is derived from two sources :

(1) *The statute law*, the various Acts of which have been passed by both Houses of Parliament and approved by the Sovereign, which constitutes the written code.

(2) *The common law*, or that derived from precedent and immemorial usage. It is sometimes described as ‘judge-made law,’ as it is mainly derived from the decisions of celebrated judges.

The tendency of modern legislation is to replace common by statute law as far as practicable.

- 3. CIVIL versus MILITARY LAW.**—The civil law is **61** binding upon all persons, and the fact of a man being a soldier in no way frees him from his obligations as a citizen. The soldier is bound to come in contact with the civilian in many instances, as in the case of billeting, impressment of carriages, tolls, and recruiting regulations, and hence it is clear that the statute military code must to a certain extent affect civilians.

Civil law is for many reasons inapplicable to military wants. Its procedure is too slow and its elaborate code requires the services of trained administrators.

Many of the most serious military offences, such as disobedience of orders, insubordination, drunkenness on duty, sentry sleeping on his post, absence, etc., are, moreover, not recognised as crimes by civil law.

No conviction by a military court exempts an S. 46 offender from being subsequently tried and punished S. 157 by a civil court, but regard must be paid to the S. 162 amount of punishment already undergone. On the

other hand, a person who has been acquitted or convicted by a civil court or court-martial, or who has been dealt with summarily by a commanding officer, cannot again be tried by court-martial or punished by a commanding officer for the same offence.

**4. ORIGIN OF ARTICLES OF WAR.**—The necessity 10 of having some means of legally punishing soldiers M. ii 3 for breaches of military duty existed from the earliest times.

Before the establishment of a standing army no necessity existed for a military code in time of peace. In time of war, however, ‘ordinances’ or ‘articles of war’ were issued by the Crown, or by the Commander of any army with authority from the Crown, to govern the troops when actually engaged in hostilities. At the close of a war the army was disbanded, and the articles ceased to have effect.

The earliest code of articles of which record remains were those issued by Richard II. and Henry V. on the occasion of wars with France.\* The punishments awarded for crimes were very severe, death and loss of limb being inflicted for comparatively trifling offences.

In accordance with the spirit of the times the military code gradually became more lenient, and during the wars of the Great Rebellion the articles in force assumed a form differing but little from those finally abolished in 1879.

The establishment of a standing army in 1660 made it necessary to have articles and regulations to govern it; but these were never sanctioned by Parliament, and the special powers assumed by the Crown were insufficient to maintain a proper discipline.

The passing of the Mutiny Act in 1689 created for M. ii 18 the first time a *statute* military law, in time of peace,

\* Grose, *Military Antiquities*.

which forbade any punishment extending to life or limb being inflicted in the United Kingdom except in accordance with the Act.

The royal prerogative as to making articles for governing troops in time of war was thus in no way interfered with, while military courts in time of peace were tacitly allowed to deal with minor offences so long as they did not infringe the limitations laid down by the Mutiny Act, or interfere unduly with the civil law.

In 1712 statutory power was given to the Crown to make Articles of War for all troops serving in Her Majesty's dominions abroad, and in 1715 the outbreak of the Rebellion led to a similar power being conferred for the governance of troops at home. In 1718 the preceding Acts were consolidated and the discipline of the army in every part of His Majesty's dominions both in peace and war and at home and abroad was regulated partly by the statutory Act and partly by Articles sanctioned by it. The statutory Articles did not, however, extend to foreign countries, and troops engaged in active service in such countries were governed as before by Articles issued under the royal prerogative.

In 1803 the great change was made of extending M. ii 31 the Mutiny Act and the statutory Articles to the army whether within or without the dominions of the Crown. There was no longer a necessity for the Crown to exercise its prerogative, and the army became governed under all circumstances by statute law.

5. **THE FIRST MUTINY ACT.**—Reference must now M. ii 7 be made to the statutory Act. The attempts made by the Crown to enforce military law in time of peace—notably by Charles I.—led to constant conflicts between Parliament and the King.

The necessity of having a legal military code did M. ii 16 not, however, become very apparent until a standing army was sanctioned, in 1660.

The growth in power and numbers of this force was viewed with some apprehension by Parliament, and articles for its government were tolerated rather than sanctioned.

Punishments amounting to loss of life or limb were prohibited, and the state of discipline became very lax.

A bill for the better regulation of the discipline of the army was introduced in 1689, and its passage through Parliament was somewhat hurried by reason of the mutiny of some Scotch regiments at Ipswich who had been ordered to Holland, but, refusing to go, had marched northwards, declaring that James II. was their rightful king. M. ii 17

This bill, which is known as the first Mutiny Act, was prefaced by a preamble (now reproduced in every Army Annual Act) stating that the maintenance of a standing army in time of peace without the consent of Parliament and the employment of martial law were both illegal. Mutiny and desertion were made punishable by death, and the assembly of courts-martial authorised ; and it was further provided that the bill should not interfere with the civil law or extend to the militia.

The duration of the Mutiny Act thus made was limited to seven months, but with few intermissions it has since been renewed annually up to 1878.

The Mutiny Act as originally passed only applied to England and Wales. Its power was gradually extended over Ireland in 1702, Scotland in 1707, the Colonies in 1718, and to the army irrespective of place in 1803.

In conjunction with the Mutiny Act the army was ruled for many years by the Articles of War issued under royal prerogative, and, as has been above shown, the royal prerogative was gradually encroached upon, and finally replaced by a statutory power in accordance with the Act in 1803.

The inconvenience of having a military code contained partly in a statutory Act and partly in Articles M. ii 33

derived from that Act led finally to a consolidation of the two in the Army Discipline Act of 1879, which two years later was repealed, and with some amendments re-enacted in the Army Act of 1881. 9

- 6. ORIGIN OF COURTS-MARTIAL.**—The administration of the military code in the first instance under Articles of War, and subsequently under both the Mutiny Act and Articles of War, was carried out by means of military courts. The first of these appears to have been the ‘curia militaris,’ or court of chivalry, which was part of the Aula Regia, or supreme court of great officers of State, established by William the Conqueror.

The Court of Chivalry consisted of the Lord High Constable, who was the King’s general and commander-in-chief, and the Earl Marshal, whose duty it was to marshal the army, and ascertain that all persons liable to serve fulfilled their liabilities.

‘To the constable it appertaineth to have cognizance of all contracts and deeds of arms, and of our war out of the realm, and also of things that touch war within the realm, which cannot be determined by common law.

‘All appeals of things done within the realm shall be tried and determined by the good laws of the realm made and used in the time of the King’s noble progenitors, and all appeals to be made of things done out of the realm shall be tried and determined before the constable and marshal of England for the time being.’\*

In time of war the court of the constable, as it was usually called, followed the army, and punished summarily according to the Articles of War for the time being in force.

It is evident that a single court was incapable of dealing with troops acting in different places, and

---

\* 1 Hen. IV. c. 14. 13 Rich. II. c. 2. An interesting account of the rise of military law is to be found in *Adye on Courts-Martial*.

additional constables and marshals were delegated by commission from the Crown to form other courts when required.

The office of High Constable was abolished in the reign of Henry VIII., and with it lapsed all the criminal jurisdiction of the Court of Chivalry. With the concurrence of the judges of the common law, the marshal occasionally held a court himself on purely civil matters, but the jurisdiction and power of punishment of the court was so limited that, although never legally abolished, it became extinct.

From the death of the last hereditary High Constable up to the recognition of military courts by statute in 1689, military law was administered by means of commissioners, by the general in command of the troops sitting himself as marshal, or by means of deputies which he was authorised to appoint.

The commissioners or deputies were usually officers of the army, and at the beginning of the great civil rebellion habitually formed courts or councils of war, in accordance with the then existing continental military jurisprudence.

These councils of war some few years prior to the passing of the Mutiny Act were called courts-martial,\* and, with slight modifications as to constitution and power, are the existing military courts.

In the earlier courts-martial the general or M. ii 15 governor of the garrison who convened the court ordinarily sat as president, the power of the court was plenary, and the sentences were carried into execution without the confirmation required under the present law.

---

\* The true derivation of the word 'martial' opens out an interesting field of inquiry. Simmons and others hold that courts-martial derive their name from the Court of the Marshal; but there is a good deal to be said against this view, as the words 'martial' and 'military' are in some of the old records synonymous.

## CHAPTER II

### *THE MILITARY CODE, AND PERSONS SUBJECT TO IT*

7. THE MILITARY CODE. 8. ARMY ANNUAL ACT. 9. ARMY ACT OF 1881—Its Contents. 10. ARTICLES OF WAR—Indian Articles of War. 11. RULES OF PROCEDURE. 12. KING'S REGULATIONS. 13. ROYAL WARRANTS. 14. GENERAL ORDERS AND ARMY CIRCULARS. 15. ARMY ORDERS. 16. ORDERS IN COUNCIL. 17. OTHER ACTS—Railway Acts—Regimental Debts Act—Regulation of Forces Act—Acts affecting the Reserve and Territorial Forces. 18. PERSONS SUBJECT TO MILITARY LAW—Regular and Reserve Forces—Territorial Forces—Indian and Colonial Forces—Civilians.
7. THE MILITARY CODE is embodied in the Army **9** Act, Rules of Procedure, King's Regulations, Army **11** Orders, Royal Warrants, and Orders in Council. To **16** these may be added the Acts and Regulations for the governance of the Reserve and Territorial Forces.  
There are also certain rules or 'laws of war' **M. xiv** which are recognised as binding by all civilised **M. i 5** nations, and derive their authority either from usage **R. 132** or express international agreement.
8. THE ARMY ANNUAL ACT is passed each year **M. ii 35** (usually in April), for the purpose of providing during twelve months for the Discipline and Regulation of the Army.  
In the preamble it is pointed out that, unless it be with the consent of Parliament, the maintenance in time of peace of a standing army within the United

Kingdom is illegal, that an army (of stated strength) as well as a force of marines is necessary for the safety of the United Kingdom and the defence of the possessions of the Crown, and that the discipline of these forces must be provided for by a code that will ensure speedy punishment for military offences.

The operation of the Army Act is therefore every year extended to the following dates in the subsequent year :

In the United Kingdom, the Channel Islands and the Isle of Man, to April 30.

Elsewhere to July 31.

And it is provided that the Army Act while in force shall apply to all persons subject to military law whether within or without H.M. dominions.

Any amendments of the Army Act that may be deemed necessary are next dealt with, and the prices to be adopted in respect of billeting added in a schedule.

9. THE ARMY ACT is the basis of the present military M. ii. 34 code. It has of itself no force, but requires to be brought into operation by the Army Annual Act, thus securing the constitutional principle of the control of Parliament over the discipline requisite for the Government of the Army. It is divided into five parts, viz. :

(1) *Discipline*.— This part deals with the various military crimes and their maximum punishment, authorises the formation of military courts, and legislates for their procedure and the carrying out of the sentences awarded by them. It also gives the Sovereign power to make Articles of War and Rules of Procedure in accordance with the provisions of the Act.

(2) *Enlistment*.— The law is laid down as to the terms upon which a man enlists and reckons service; arranges for his transfer, re-engagement, prolongation of service, and discharge; and deals with those

special provisions in regard to enlistment in which both soldiers and civilians are concerned.

(3) *Billeting and Impressment of Carriages*.—This portion of the Act only comes in force when troops are on the move in the United Kingdom, and arrangements have to be made through the medium of the police with the civil population in order to provide food for the soldier, and carriage for his effects.

(4) *General provisions*.—These refer to details connected with the military courts and their jurisdiction, military prisons, the pay and privileges of the soldier, legal penalties in matters respecting the Forces and miscellaneous regulations.

(5) *Application of the Act*.—The persons subject to military law are classified in detail, definitions are given of the various terms used in the Act, and saving clauses and schedules added as to its application.

- 10. ARTICLES OF WAR.**—The Sovereign is authorised S. 69 by the Army Act to make Articles of War, but no 4 crime specified in the Act can be punished otherwise M. iii. than in accordance with its provisions, nor can any 38 crime not mentioned in the Act be punished by death or penal servitude. Owing to the completeness of the present military code it is doubtful if articles will ever again be issued, but if so, they are to be judicially noticed, and will apply only to persons subject to military law, while the Army Act as it stands affects in some cases the civilian population.

*The Indian Articles of War* are embodied in an Act S. 175 of the local legislature, and affect all *native* officers, S. 176 soldiers, and other persons belonging to, or serving S. 177 with, any portion of His Majesty's Indian Army. S. 180

Americans and Christian Europeans (other than English) and their legitimate Christian descendants belonging to the Indian Army are also subject to the Indian law, but must be tried by courts-martial composed of European officers only.

All British-born subjects and their legitimate

Christian descendants belonging to the Indian Army **18** are amenable only to the provisions of the Army Act.

The power of the Admiralty to make *Articles of War* S. 179 for the government of marines is distinctly recognised.

- 11. RULES OF PROCEDURE.**—The Sovereign is S. 70 authorised to make Rules, under the hand of a Secretary of State, for the purpose of carrying the Army Act into execution so far as relates to the investigation, trial, and punishment of offences. They deal with the investigation and disposal of offences by a commanding officer; the convening and constitution of courts-martial; the framing of charges, and preparations for the defence; the procedure to be observed in trials by court-martial; the confirmation and revision of findings and sentences; general provisions as to proceedings of court, witnesses, evidence, friend of the accused, counsel, judge-advocate, and record of transactions; field-general courts-martial, and courts of inquiry. Forms as to courts-martial, charges and commitments to prison are added in appendices. The Rules of Procedure must not contain anything contrary to or inconsistent with the provisions of the Army Act, are to be judicially noticed, and are to be laid before Parliament as soon as practicable after they are made.
- 12. THE KING'S REGULATIONS** lay down most of the details as to the interior economy of corps, give general instructions as to the maintenance of discipline, define clearly the powers and duties of commanding officers, and supplement the provisions of the Army Act as to offences against enlistment and the disposal of soldiers under sentence.
- 13. ROYAL WARRANTS** are published from time to time by the Crown under the hand of the Secretary of State for War, and lay down the permanent regu-

lations as to the government, discipline, pay, promotion, or conditions of service in H.M. Forces.

- 14. GENERAL ORDERS AND ARMY CIRCULARS.**—Prior to 1888 General Orders were issued monthly to the army by the Commander-in-Chief as the representative of the Crown, while Army Circulars were issued by the Secretary of State for War as the representative of Parliament and the Treasury.
- 15. ARMY ORDERS.**—All Royal Warrants (signed by the Secretary of State for War), General Orders, Regulations, and Instructions to the Army are now promulgated monthly in ‘Army Orders,’ which are issued by direction of the Army Council.
- 16. ORDERS IN COUNCIL** are the regulations laid down M. 605 by the Crown with the advice of the Privy Council. In matters of discipline they are only issued to meet cases which cannot be conveniently dealt with by Royal Warrants or Army Orders.
- 17. OTHER PARLIAMENTARY ACTS.**—The following Parliamentary Acts are also at present in force, and affect persons therein referred to :
- (1) *Certain Railway Acts* dealing with the conveyance of troops by rail.
  - (2) *The Regimental Debts Act*, which arranges for the distribution of effects in the case of death of an officer or soldier.
  - (3) *The Regulation of the Forces Act*, 1871.—The chief unrepealed section is one giving power to the Government to take possession temporarily of any railroad in the United Kingdom in cases of emergency.
  - (4) *The National Defence Act*, 1888, which gives the Government power in cases of great emergency to have precedence of traffic on all railways.
  - (5) *The Reserve Forces Act*, 1882, *the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act* of 1907, and sundry Acts,

relating to the Militia, Yeomanry and Volunteers, which affect a limited number of persons, and will soon be obsolete.

- 18. PERSONS SUBJECT TO MILITARY LAW.—**S. 175  
*Regular Forces.*—Officers of the regular forces on the S. 176 active list (including seconded and half-pay officers) and soldiers of the regular forces. Officers not on S. 175 the active list are only subject to the law if employed on military service under an officer of the regular forces, or if as reserve officers they are called out for service. (*See definition Regular Forces* and modifications below as to Indian Army, Marines and Colonial forces).

*Reserve Forces.*—Officers of special reserve units S. 176 (including officers of the special reserve of officers), R.F.A. Army reservists and special reservists when called 6, 15 out for training, in aid of the civil power, on permanent service, and when employed in military service under the orders of an officer of the regular forces and at all times in respect of liability to trial for certain offences specified in the Reserve Forces Acts. When called out on permanent service the reserve forces form part of the regular forces.

*Pensioners.*—Soldiers when employed in military S. 176 service, or in semi-military employment, under an officer of the regular forces.

*Marines.*—Officers and soldiers generally when not S. 179 subject to the Naval Discipline Act, but the jurisdiction S. 190 of the Admiralty is not interfered with. (8)

*Territorial Force.*—Permanent staff and officers always; soldiers when embodied, out for training, attached to regulars, or called out for actual military service for purposes of defence in pursuance of any agreement. A territorial force reserve, and a technical reserve are in process of being raised, and when called S. 175 out will form part of their territorial force. S. 176

*Indian Forces.*—All British-born subjects and their S. 180 legitimate Christian descendants belonging to His S. 175

Majesty's Indian Army, officers in the Indian Army S. 190 Reserve when called out in any military capacity.

All officers, soldiers, and followers of His Majesty's Indian Forces, who are natives of India, are subject to the Indian military law, but a court for their trial can be convened under the Army Act. 10

*Colonial Forces*.—Colonial troops raised at the imperial expense or under imperial control, when serving under the command of an officer of the regular forces. S. 175  
S. 176

Any law of India or a colony may apply the provisions of the Army Act, wholly or partially, to forces *locally raised*, subject to such adaptations as may be necessary to make them applicable. Where such forces are serving with regulars, any deficiencies of Colonial law may be remedied by treating them as regulars under the Army Act, subject to such exceptions and modifications as the G.O. commanding may make. S. 177

Individual members of Indian and colonial forces when attached to any part of the home forces in the United Kingdom are subject to the Army Act.

*Civilians*.—All persons attached to or accompanying a force on active service, either in an official capacity or as holding a pass, employed by the troops, or a camp follower. (Natives of India remain subject to the Indian military law.) S. 175  
S. 176  
S. 184

It should be remembered that the Army Act is part of the statute law, and that all persons, irrespective of their being subject to military law, are bound to obey those provisions of it which are applicable to them: for instance, policemen are liable with regard to billeting and impressment of carriage, innkeepers with regard to billeting, and all persons in reference to certain offences relating to desertion, enlistment, purchasing regimental necessities, &c. S. 109  
S. 116  
S. 110  
S. 152  
S. 98  
S. 156

## CHAPTER III

*MILITARY CUSTODY*

19. **MILITARY CUSTODY**—Offences against—No Duty while in—Informal Custody—Detention in Custody—Ordering into Custody. 20. **ARREST OF OFFICERS.** 21. **ORDERING ARREST OF OFFICER.** 22. **REPORT OF ARREST.** 23. **REFUSAL OR APPEAL.** 24. **RELEASE FROM ARREST.** 25. **ARREST OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.** 26. **ARREST OF WARRANT OFFICERS.** 27. **PRIVILEGE FROM ARREST.** 28. **WRONGFUL ARREST.** 29. **ARREST OF SOLDIERS**—The Gaoler—On the March—Treatment of Minor Offences—When Crime is confessed. 30. **FORWARDING THE CHARGE.** 31. **REPORT OF COMMITTAL**—Non-Delivery of Charge. 32. **RELEASE FROM CONFINEMENT.**
19. **MILITARY CUSTODY.**—Whenever a person subject **33** to military law commits an offence, steps should be taken to have the matter investigated without delay. S. 45 If the offence is of a serious character, or if the circumstances of the case render it advisable, the person charged is taken into *military custody*, i.e., in the case of a private soldier (not under sentence) placed K. 473 in either open or close arrest. M. iv 1

*Offences against.*—Permitting the escape of a S. 10 soldier in arrest or his unnecessary detention or S. 20 irregular imprisonment are offences against military S. 21 law, and any soldier in arrest who resists an escort, S. 22

or escapes, or attempts to escape from lawful custody can be severely punished.\*

*No Duty while in.*—An offender while in custody is K. 482 not to be required to perform any military duty further than may be necessary to relieve him from the charge of any cash, stores, or accounts for which he may be responsible. He is not to bear arms except by order of his commanding officer in an emergency or on the line of march, or in a detention barrack by order of the commandant for purposes of drill. On board ship he may, if allowed to remain at large, be employed on fatigue duties although he should not be placed on guard. If either from error or unavoidable circumstances he is put on duty, he is not thereby absolved from liability to be proceeded against for his offence.

*Informal Custody.*—When a soldier is in legal custody S. 172 no technical informality in the order in pursuance of which he was brought into or kept in such custody shall cause his release, and any irregularity in the order may subsequently be amended. If the order proceed from a person having no authority to issue it, the Secretary of State should be applied to for a warrant.

*Detention in Custody.*—A person in custody must have his case investigated without delay, and at all events within 48 hours after his committal has been reported to his commanding officer. Every case of a person being detained in custody beyond 48 hours is to be reported to the officer to whom application would be made to convene a court-martial for the trial of the person charged. If an officer or soldier (not on active service) remains in custody for more than 8 days without a court-martial being ordered to assemble, a special report must be made by his

S. 165

R. 2

K. 484

R. 135

S. 45

R. 1

---

\* An 'escort' is held to include a single non-commissioned officer or soldier who has been placed in charge of a soldier in arrest.

commanding officer to the officer to whom application would be made to convene a court-martial for the trial of the case, and a similar report must be furnished every 8 days till either the officer or soldier is released or a court is assembled for his trial. Any serious delay (15 days at home, 30 days abroad) in R. 17 assembling a general or district court-martial is to 77 be reported to the Army Council by the convening officer.

*Ordering into.*—A person is usually ordered into S. 45 military custody by an officer or non-commissioned K. 599 officer of superior military rank, but provost-marshals (who can only be appointed abroad) have the power to arrest and detain any persons subject S. 74 to military law who are committing an offence. M. iv 39

Naval officers in command of His Majesty's ships M. 605 can order any officer or soldier to be put in arrest or confined for committing an offence against the good order and discipline of the ships.

Officers and non-commissioned officers are as a K. 465 rule put in *arrest*, and if the circumstances of the case require it they may be placed for custody under the charge of a guard, piquet, patrol, sentry, or K. 473 provost-marshall. Soldiers are either placed under *arrest* and put in confinement or allowed to be at large under *open arrest*.

Peers and Members of Parliament are not privi- M. iv 9 leged from arrest, but the fact and cause of their arrest should always be communicated to the Lord Chancellor, or to the Speaker, as the case may be.

**20. ARREST OF OFFICERS.**—Arrest is *close arrest* un- K. 466 less *open arrest* is specially ordered. An officer in M. iv 3 *close arrest* is not allowed to leave his tent or quarters, except to take exercise under supervision. When in *open arrest*, he may take exercise at stated periods within defined limits, but must not appear at mess or any place of amusement or public resort. An officer in arrest must always wear uniform, but without sword, sash, belts or spurs.

21. ORDERING ARRESTS OF OFFICERS.—An officer S. 45 can place in arrest any other officer of inferior rank, but no officer can order the arrest of an officer, non-commissioned officer, or soldier, if an officer of a rank senior to himself is present.

When occasion necessitates an officer being placed without delay under arrest, the senior officer present, if he be of a rank higher than the offender, should order it.

In the exceptional case of a ‘quarrel, fray, or disorder’ a junior officer may order the arrest of a senior S. 45 (even of a different corps) who is engaged in the disturbance. M. iv 6

An officer is put in arrest either directly by the M. iv 2 officer who orders it, or more generally through the medium of a staff officer. The order may be verbal or written, the latter being a preferable mode, except where the offence is committed in the presence of the superior officer.

When immediate action is not necessary it is better, K. 469 instead of putting an officer under arrest, to report him to his own commanding officer, who should inquire into the circumstances of the case, and not place the offender under arrest until he has satisfied himself that the matter must be proceeded with. If necessary, the adjutant or one of the acting regimental staff is then ordered to place him under arrest.

On being put in arrest an officer is deprived of his M. iv. 2 sword, and becomes to all intents and purposes a prisoner.

22. REPORT OF ARREST.—When an officer is placed K. 469 under arrest (whether afterwards released or not) the commanding officer is directed to report the case without delay to the general officer commanding. It is necessary, therefore, that an officer who places another in arrest should invariably report at once the fact of his having done so to the commanding

officer of the offender, or to the general in command direct in very exceptional cases.

- 23. REFUSAL OR APPEAL.**—An officer cannot decline S. 9 to go under arrest when ordered by one senior to himself, nor can he refuse to obey the order of a junior in the case of a ‘fray.’

An officer under arrest cannot demand a court-martial, nor can he decline to be released by proper authority or refuse to return to duty.

- 24. RELEASE FROM ARREST.**—Unless an arrest has been made in error, an officer should not, as a rule, be released without the sanction of the highest authority to whom the case may have been referred.

- 25. ARREST OF N.-C. OFFICERS.**—The restrictions as to close and open arrest apply to non-commissioned officers. If a non-commissioned officer is charged with a serious offence he is placed under arrest by the senior officer or non-commissioned officer on the spot. In case of doubt the arrest may be delayed, and if the offence is not of a serious nature it may be investigated and disposed of without previous arrest.

- 26. ARREST OF WARRANT OFFICERS.**—A warrant officer holding an honorary commission ranks as an officer, and is similarly dealt with. All other warrant officers are treated as non-commissioned officers.

- 27. PRIVILEGE FROM ARREST.**—An officer or non-commissioned officer or other person who is summoned to give evidence before a court-martial is privileged from arrest on civil process, e.g., for debt, damages, etc., while going to, attending at, or returning from the court. There is no privilege from arrest on a criminal process, e.g., on a charge for a felony, misdemeanour, or other crime.

- 28. WRONGFUL ARREST.**—If an officer thinks that he **280** has been wrongfully put in arrest, or is otherwise aggrieved, and does not obtain redress from his commanding officer, he can forward his complaint through the authorised channel to the Army Council and S. 42 Secretary of State for submission to His Majesty.

Whether an action by a person subject to military law will lie against an officer for an act within the limits of his authority, but done maliciously and without probable cause, is a question on which judicial opinion has been divided. The present view appears to be that a civil court cannot give redress.

- 29. ARREST OF SOLDIERS.**—A soldier is either allowed to be at large under open arrest, or is placed under arrest and in the custody of a guard, piquet, patrol, sentry, or provost-marshall. He is not to be confined in the guard detention rooms for offences unaccompanied by drunkenness, violence or insubordination, unless it be necessary in the interests of discipline or to ensure safe custody.

Except in cases of personal violence or when on escort or detached duties, lance-corporals or acting bombardiers with less than four years' service should not place soldiers under arrest, but should report the offence to the orderly sergeant, who will act as the circumstances of the case require.

*The Gaoler.*—A commander of a guard or provost-marshall cannot refuse to take charge of a soldier in arrest handed over to him for safe custody, and is bound not to improperly release such soldier or allow him to escape.

*On the March.*—When troops are on the line of march, or when from any cause there is a lack of accommodation for the temporary custody of offenders, a soldier who is under arrest or who is under sentence may be committed by order of his commanding officer to any prison, police station,

lock-up, detention barrack, barrack detention room, or other place of confinement in which prisoners may legally be confined, for a period not exceeding seven days.

S. 132

*Treatment of Minor Offences.*—In the case of minor offences, unaccompanied with drunkenness, violence, or insubordination (unless confinement is necessary to ensure the safe custody of the soldier), the charge may be investigated by officers commanding companies without confining the offender. A private soldier, if placed under open arrest, will not quit barracks until his case has been disposed of. He will attend all parades, but will not be detailed for duty.

K. 475

K. 484

*When Crime is confessed.*—If a soldier makes a confession of desertion, or of having committed some offence against the laws of enlistment, and proof is not at once forthcoming, he may be allowed to continue at duty pending inquiry.

K. 479

**30. FORWARDING THE ‘CHARGE.’**—The officer or non-commissioned officer who orders the arrest of a soldier should deliver to the official into whose custody he is committed an account in writing signed by himself of the offence with which he charges the prisoner. This account or ‘charge’ should be short, and contain all the material points connected with the accusation made. If the ‘charge’ is not delivered at the time of committal, a verbal report to the same effect is to be made. It should always be sent in as soon as possible, and its delivery should never be delayed beyond twenty-four hours.

S. 45

M. iv

14

M. iv.

15

M. iv.

**31. REPORT OF COMMITTAL.**—The officer or non-commissioned officer who is in charge of the guard must enter in the guard report the name and offence of the soldier in arrest, and the rank and name of the person committing him. This report must be sent to the proper authority when the guard is relieved, and in

S. 45

S. 21

K. 463

any case within twenty-four hours, and the original 'charge' or a copy of it is to be forwarded to the commanding officer of the soldier.

*Non-Delivery of Charge.*—The non-delivery of a M. iv 'charge' should be noted in the guard report, and 16 if it be not delivered within twenty-four hours the K. 463 commander of the guard will either take proper steps for procuring it, or report the circumstance to the officer to whom his guard report is furnished.

If no 'charge' or other evidence is forthcoming to justify the keeping of the soldier in custody, the officer to whom the guard reports are furnished will, at the expiration of forty-eight hours from the time of committal, order his release.

**32. RELEASE FROM CONFINEMENT.**—A soldier when M. iv confined can only be released by proper authority. 11 If all the circumstances connected with the offence are purely regimental, and the soldier is confined in the regimental guardroom, he can be released by order of his commanding officer.

If the soldier has been sent to a garrison guardroom, or while on his way to such custody has been temporarily entrusted for safe keeping to a regimental guard, permission for his release must be obtained from garrison headquarters.

## CHAPTER IV

*INVESTIGATION OF CHARGES*

33. INVESTIGATION.—The commanding officer of an S. 21 officer or soldier who has been taken into military S. 45 custody will take care to have the case investigated R. 2 without delay. Every case of a person being kept in R. 135 custody for more than forty-eight hours (exclusive of Sundays, Good Friday, and Christmas Day) after the committal has been reported to the commanding officer, and the reason thereof, shall be reported to the officer to whom application would be made to convene a court-martial for the trial of the person charged.
34. CHARGE AGAINST AN OFFICER.—Charges M. iv. against an officer may be investigated either before 19 or after he is placed in arrest, according to circumstances. The case is either examined into privately R. 124 by a competent military authority or formally investigated by the commanding officer, or a court of inquiry is ordered to assemble. 273  
An officer who is charged with an offence under R. 8 the Army Act can demand the formal investigation R. 3 of his case by the commanding officer. The investigation R. 4 shall be held and the evidence taken in his R. 124

presence in writing, if he requires it, in the same manner, as nearly as circumstances admit, as is required in the case of a soldier.

When an officer is ordered for trial by court-martial without any such taking of evidence in his presence, an abstract of the evidence to be adduced shall be delivered to him not less than twenty-four hours before his trial, and shall be laid before the court-martial on its assembly. R. 8

The commanding officer of the accused is responsible that the investigation is commenced within forty-eight hours after the arrest has been reported to him, and that the case is either dismissed or referred to a superior, or that an application is made for a general court-martial through the usual channel. R. 2 R. 135 R. 4

An officer whose character or conduct has been publicly impugned is bound to submit the case to his commanding officer or other competent military authority for investigation. Pending the investigation he may be suspended from duty and placed under the same restrictions as in open arrest. K. 446

**35. CHARGE AGAINST A WARRANT AND NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICER.** A warrant officer holding an honorary commission ranks as an officer, and is treated as such. S. 190

When a warrant officer not holding an honorary commission or a non-commissioned officer commits a minor offence he is usually admonished by the commanding officer (or if below the rank of sergeant may be admonished or reprimanded but not severely reprimanded by the company commander). If the offence is more serious, his case is investigated at the orderly-room in the same manner as that of a soldier. As a warrant officer cannot be punished by a commanding officer or tried by a regimental court-martial, the charge against him must either be dismissed or the case sent for trial by a district or general court-martial.

S. 182

**36. CHARGE AGAINST A SOLDIER.**—Charges against K. 484 non-commissioned officers or soldiers will first be investigated by the officer commanding their company, who has power to punish private soldiers for minor offences. During investigation a soldier is to 53 K. 481 be deprived of his cap and any article that can be used as a missile. If the company officer disposes of the case of a soldier who has not been in confinement he will enter his award on A.F. B. 281, and the Army Form will be sent on the following Saturday to the orderly-room for supervision by the C.O., and will subsequently be attached to the guard report for that day. When the case of a soldier who has been in confinement is disposed of by the company commander, he will report the fact to the orderly-room, and the entry 'disposed of on A.F. B. 281' will be made in the punishment column of the guard report. In the event of the case being reserved for the award of the C.O., the charge (A.F. B. 252) will be sent for entry in the guard report. All charges against soldiers not disposed of by the officer M. iv commanding the company and all charges against 21 n.c. officers are investigated by the commanding officer in the orderly-room every morning, in the presence of the accused and the officer commanding his company, etc.

Investigation must be commenced within forty-eight hours after the committal of the accused to R. 2 custody has been reported. In the case of drunkenness a delay of at least twenty-four hours is advisable K. 478 in order to ensure that he is sober when brought up.

The leading facts connected with the offence 30 charged are shown in the 'charge' forwarded by the person who ordered the arrest of the soldier. In some M. iv cases, however, additional incidents may be brought 15 out in evidence in the orderly-room. The commanding officer should not, *as a rule*, make these additional facts the cause of new charges being made

against the accused, although he has the power to do so.

*Evidence.*—The accused may demand that the evidence be taken on oath, in every case that the C.O. R. 3 S. 46 has power to deal with summarily. The accused may apply to be called as a witness, and will give his evidence on oath if the other witnesses are sworn.

If the C.O. after hearing the evidence is of opinion that the charge ought to be proceeded with, he will either (1) dispose of the case summarily if it is within 51 his powers and he deems it expedient, or (2) refer the case to superior authority, or (3) adjourn the case for the purpose of having the evidence reduced to writing.

When a case is so adjourned the C.O. or an officer appointed by him will take down in writing, in the presence of the accused, the evidence of each witness and any questions put by the accused in cross-examination, together with the answers to them.. The evidence of each witness shall be read over to him and shall be signed by him. If the accused has already given evidence verbally he may *apply* to give evidence to be taken down in writing and inserted in the summary, but he cannot be *compelled* to repeat the evidence previously given. Any voluntary statement of the accused material to his defence is also M. vi 81 taken down, but he should be warned that any evidence he gives or any statement he makes may be used as evidence against him. He need not sign the statement.

As a rule, the summary of evidence should be taken on the same day as the investigation, and a statement that the requirements of R.P. 4 have been complied with should be entered at the end and signed by the officer taking the evidence.

The *summary of evidence* thus taken is to be carefully considered by the C.O., who may, if the case is within his jurisdiction, and the accused has not

elected to be tried by a district court-martial, rehear the case, and, if he thinks fit, dispose of it summarily.

Otherwise he will remand the accused for trial by R. 5 court-martial or refer the case to superior authority.

The *summary of evidence* may be used for certain M. iv limited purposes at the trial and also for the purpose 29 of giving the accused notice of the charge he will M. v 27 have to meet, and to the convening officer and presi- 255 dent of the court notice of the case to be tried.

Either the summary itself or a true copy must be R. 5 laid before the court-martial before whom the accused is tried, and a copy must be given gratis to the accused at the time he is warned for trial.

In cases of emergency such as may arise on active R. 104 service, on the eve of embarkation or on the line of march, the summary may be dispensed with, and it is not taken when a soldier is to be tried by a field general court-martial.

A witness who wilfully makes a false statement, or S. 40 makes false accusations or gives false evidence on S. 27 oath, can be punished, but, except in very flagrant S. 29 cases of false accusations and perjury, proceedings should not be taken against an accused in respect of the manner in which he conducts his defence.

### 37. DISPOSAL OF DEFENCE.—On completion of the M. iv investigation the commanding officer proceeds to 23 either—

(a) *Dismiss the case*, or remand the accused for K. 490 further inquiry, or release the accused and order him to duty without prejudice to his re-arrest at a future time when further evidence may be forthcoming. R. 4 When, from want of jurisdiction, insufficiency of evi- S. 46 dence, or any other cause, a case is dismissed, no entry will be made in the official books or record kept of the proceedings.

(b) *Refer the case to superior authority*. The usual K. 487 cause of reference is, that the C.O. wishes to deal with

the case summarily, and the offence is one that he cannot deal with summarily without permission.

(c) *Summarily dispose of the case.*—The Class of K. 487 offences which a commanding officer may summarily K. 493 dispose of, and the punishments that may be awarded 39 (where a soldier does not elect to be tried by district court-martial), are clearly laid down. The offence 42 of drunkenness must in certain cases be disposed of summarily.

(d) *Order a regimental court-martial to assemble.*— R. 16 Owing to the power of punishment now possessed by R. 5 commanding officers, and the ability to form a dis- R. 14 trict court-martial of three officers, it will now be R. 135 rarely necessary to assemble a regimental court-mar- tial, except for the trial of a non-commissioned officer on board His Majesty's ships. Exceptional cases may still arise, in small isolated detachments, on the line of march, or on board ship, where this court may, owing to the absence of a convening authority for a higher court, have still to be resorted to, but, as a general rule, when a case is not disposed of sum- marily a district court-martial should be convened. When the accused is remanded for trial by regimental court-martial it should be assembled within thirty- six hours, but in every case there should be an interval of eighteen hours between the time when he is informed of the charges against him and his arraign- ment.

(e) *Apply to a superior for a general or district court-martial.*—Application is made to a superior K. 548 (within thirty-six hours) when the offence is beyond R. 5 the jurisdiction of a commanding officer, or when a R. 135 punishment more severe than can be inflicted by a K. 487 commanding officer or a regimental court-martial is, from the circumstances of the case, desirable, or when a soldier has elected to be tried by a district court-martial. The application (like the charge sheet) must be signed by the officer in actual com- mand of the unit to which the accused belongs.

## CHAPTER V

### *POWERS OF COMMANDING OFFICER*

38. THE COMMANDING OFFICER.—A commanding officer, in the ordinary sense of the word, means an officer whose duty it is, in accordance with the usual custom of the service, to deal with offences and either dispose of them on his own authority or refer the cases to superior authority.
39. HIS JURISDICTION.
40. DETENTION UP TO TWENTY-EIGHT DAYS.
41. FIELD PUNISHMENT.
42. FINES FOR DRUNKENNESS—Combined Offences—N.C. Officers.
43. FORFEITURE OF PAY.
44. FORFEITURE OF G.C. Badges.
45. STOPPAGES.
46. MINOR PUNISHMENTS.
47. COMBINED PUNISHMENTS.
48. PUNISHMENTS OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS—No Minor Punishments—Resignation of Rank—Report on Conviction.
49. WARRANT OFFICERS.
50. AWARDING PUNISHMENT—Illegal Award.
51. TRIAL BY COURT-MARTIAL.
52. ONLY ONE TRIAL.
53. POWER OF COMPANY OFFICERS.
54. OFFICERS ON DETACHMENT.
- 38. THE COMMANDING OFFICER.**—A commanding officer, in the ordinary sense of the word, means an officer whose duty it is, in accordance with the usual custom of the service, to deal with offences and either dispose of them on his own authority or refer the cases to superior authority.

It includes also the officer commanding a company, troop, or battery so far as it relates to the summary award of any punishment authorised to be given by him, and so far as it relates to a summary finding in a case of absence without leave.

In cases to which the above definition does not apply, it must depend on the custom of the service and the King's Regulations as to who is, under any

given circumstances, the commanding officer for a particular purpose.

**39. HIS JURISDICTION.**—Under the Army Act any commanding officer or any court-martial can deal with any offence. It is not intended, however, that serious offences should be tried by the minor courts, and hence their jurisdiction and powers of punishment are limited, and restrictions are placed in the way of the commanding officer dealing with the more serious offences unless he obtains the sanction of superior authority.

There is no offence which a commanding officer is compelled by the Act or Rules to send before a court-martial, but the offence of drunkenness by a private soldier must in certain cases be disposed of summarily.

The following offences mentioned in the Act can be summarily punished by the commanding officer, or be tried by a regimental court-martial convened by him, without reference to superior authority :—

1. Offences in respect of military service punishable more severely on active service than at other times (except on active service). S. 6
2. Using threatening or insubordinate language to a superior officer (except on active service). S. 8 (2)
3. Disobeying a lawful command of a superior officer (except on active service). S. 9 (2)
4. Resisting against lawful custody, or breaking out of barracks. S. 10 (2) (3) (4)
5. Neglect of standing orders. S. 11
6. Assisting or conniving at desertion. S. 14
7. Absence without leave, or from parade or school, or being found out of bounds. S. 15
8. Malingering or misconduct in hospital. S. 18 (1) (3)
9. Drunkenness. S. 19
10. Permitting escape of a prisoner (except if wilfully done). S. 20

11. Irregularity in detaining and reporting a prisoner. S. 21
12. Escaping from lawful custody. S. 22
13. Losing by neglect or making away with arms, ammunition, clothing, equipment, or necessaries, or making away with military decorations. S. 24
14. Wilfully injuring the property of an officer, soldier, regimental institution or the public, or ill-treating a Government horse. S. 24
15. Making a false statement in order to prolong a furlough. S. 27 (4)
16. Making a false statement on attestation (except in the case of enlisting from Army Reserve). S. 33
17. Infringing the enlistment regulations. S. 34
18. Conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline. (Under this heading would fall the majority of the minor military and civil offences committed by a soldier.) S. 40

First and less serious offences under the above sections, and minor neglects or omissions, not resulting from contumacious or deliberate disregard of authority, or not associated with graver offences, should, as a rule, be dealt with summarily. K. 487

A charge for any other offence which the commanding officer desires to dispose of summarily will be referred to superior authority by a letter briefly stating the circumstances of the case, and accompanied by the soldier's company conduct sheets.

A commanding officer may, subject to the soldier's right to elect, previous to the award, to be tried by D.C.M., inflict the following summary punishments on a private soldier :—

- 40. DETENTION UP TO TWENTY-EIGHT DAYS** K. 493  
 (with or without hard labour) . . . ; but, for the offence of absence without leave, the number of days' detention awarded, if it exceeds seven, must not be more than the number of days of absence. S. 46 (5) 178

Detention exceeding seven days (except in cases of S. 46

absence without leave) cannot be awarded by an K. 493 officer under the rank of field officer.

When detention exceeding seven days is awarded, K. 494 a minor punishment must not be given in addition. This does not, however, prevent an additional summary punishment affecting pay being given, such as a fine or stoppage of pay.

*Ex.* A man may be charged with absence for ten days. For this offence he may receive any number of hours' detention up to 168 hours (with or without confinement to barracks), or he may be given eight to ten days' detention. If he returns drunk (and he is liable to a fine) he may in addition be fined for the drunkenness according to scale.

Any award of detention (*by C.O.*), up to seven days K. 494 inclusive, will be in hours (168); if exceeding seven days, in days.

The term of detention, when awarded in days, is R. 6 reckoned from the first minute of the day of award; when in hours, from the hour at which the prisoner is received into the detention barrack, or, if the R. 135 prisoner cannot be sooner received, not later than (A) twenty-four hours after the usual hour of committal on the day of the award.

41. **FIELD PUNISHMENT.**—On active service a private S. 46 soldier may be awarded field punishment for any period not exceeding twenty-eight days, and may in S. 138 addition to or without any other punishment be (c) ordered to forfeit all ordinary pay for a period not exceeding twenty-eight days.
42. **FINES FOR DRUNKENNESS.**—Where the charge S. 46 is against a soldier for drunkenness the C.O. shall **184** deal with the case summarily unless the offence was committed on active service, or on duty, or after the offender was warned for duty, or unless by reason of the drunkenness the offender was found unfit for duty or unless the soldier has been guilty of drunken-

ness on not less than four occasions in the preceding twelve months. Nothing in the above section shall affect the jurisdiction of a court-martial or the right of a soldier to be tried by a district court-martial.

Drunkenness on duty includes drunkenness on K. 510 parade and on the line of march.

A commanding officer in dealing summarily with K. 493 a case of drunkenness must always impose a fine when the soldier is liable thereto; as the award, when prescribed by the scale, is compulsory (except when unpaid fines amount to 20s.).

In computing fines observe the following rules :— K. 512

I. For the first instance during a soldier's service, no fine.

II. (a) For the second offence, 2s. 6d.

(b) For the third and every subsequent offence, 5s., but if the third or subsequent offence occurs within six months of the preceding offence, 7s. 6d., and if within three months, 10s.

Time during which a soldier is absent from duty by reason of imprisonment, detention, or absence without leave is not to be reckoned in the above periods.

III. On mobilization, or when men are re-transferred to the colours from the reserve, cases of drunkenness recorded against them before transfer to the reserve will not be taken into account in computing the fines for further instances of that offence after they rejoin the colours.

Every instance of drunkenness entails an entry in K. 1916 the regimental conduct sheets.

Detention should never be awarded for an instance of drunkenness not triable by court-martial except when the amount of unpaid fine is 20s. and upwards, in which case a C.O. should substitute detention or such other punishment which it is in his power to award.

In dealing with cases of drunkenness not triable by court-martial confinement to barracks should only

be added to a fine when the circumstances are such as to increase the gravity of the offences.

*Combined Offences.*—When a soldier commits the offence of *simple* drunkenness in connection with a more serious offence for which he is sent to trial by court-martial, he should not be charged with the drunkenness before the court-martial unless he is liable to trial and the commanding officer thinks it a case that should be tried. K. 511

When a charge of drunkenness in such cases is not preferred before the court-martial, the commanding officer will make an entry of the offence, either imposing a fine, if the soldier is liable thereto, or making the following note in the punishment column : ‘No punishment ; awaiting trial on another charge.’

*Non-commissioned officers.*—The obligation on a commanding officer to deal summarily with a soldier charged with drunkenness does not apply to a non-commissioned officer charged with drunkenness. S. 183 S. 46

### 43. FORFEITURE OF PAY FOR ABSENCE WITH- P.W. OUT LEAVE.—A soldier forfeits his pay for every day he is absent without leave. The following rules apply to cases of short absence. S. 140

In computing time for the purpose of forfeiture of pay act on the following data :—

(1) Six consecutive hours count as *one day*, whether the absence is wholly in one calendar day, or partly in one calendar day and partly in another.

(2) Twelve consecutive hours count as *two days*, provided that the absence is partly in one calendar day and partly in another.

(3) For absence over twelve hours a soldier forfeits one day’s pay for every calendar day during any portion of which he was absent.

For example, a soldier absent from 10 P.M. on Monday to 11 A.M. on Tuesday forfeits two days’ pay, but if absent from 9 A.M. on Monday till midnight the same day he only forfeits one day’s pay.

A man absent from 11.45 P.M. on Monday till 12.15 A.M. on Wednesday forfeits three days' pay.

It is important to remember that the number of P.W. days' pay which a man forfeits will in no case exceed the number of calendar days during the whole or portion of which he was absent. 904

Thus a soldier forfeits one day's pay for any period of six hours' continuous absence without leave, and where the absence extends over twelve hours he forfeits one day's pay in respect of any day, reckoned from midnight to midnight, during any portion of which he was absent.

The exceptional case must now be considered, P.W. which arises when a man's absence *prevented his fulfilling some military duty which was thrown on another person*. Under these circumstances a day for the purpose of forfeiture of pay is *any period or part, however short, of an ordinary calendar day*; two days is any such period with six hours added to it. 903 (B)

For example, a man is absent from duty, which was therefore thrown on another soldier, at 6 P.M. on Monday. If he returns at any time up to midnight he forfeits *one day's pay*, but if he does not come back till 12.30 A.M. on Tuesday he forfeits *two days' pay*, though he may really only have been six hours and a half absent.

Again, a man absent under similar circumstances from 4 to 5 P.M. on Monday forfeits *one day's pay*, and a man absent from 11 P.M. on Monday and returning at 6 A.M. on Tuesday forfeits *two days' pay*.

Before forfeiting the pay of a man in this exceptional case care must be taken that *both* the conditions—(1) that he has been prevented from fulfilling some military duty, and (2) that the duty was therefore thrown on someone else—are fulfilled.

When the absence extends over two days, an offender, as before, necessarily forfeits one day's pay in respect of any day, reckoned from midnight

to midnight, during any portion of which he was absent.

Every offence of absence entailing forfeiture of pay K. 1916 is recorded in the regimental conduct sheet, except when the absence does not exceed two days.

- 44. FORFEITURE OF G.C. BADGES.**—One badge held P.W. by a soldier shall be forfeited for each occasion on 1021 which his name appears in the regimental conduct sheet. The earning of G.C. badges and the regaining of them when lost also depends on the absence for a specified time of entries in the conduct sheets.

A commanding officer in awarding punishment must take into consideration the fact that an award entailing a regimental entry carries with it a further punishment to a well-behaved soldier.

- 45. STOPPAGE OF PAY.**—Stoppages of ordinary pay S. 138 may be awarded by a commanding officer to make good expenses caused by a soldier, or any loss, damage, or destruction done by him to any arms, ammunition, equipment, clothing, instruments, regimental necessaries, military decorations, or any buildings or property. Deductions from pay in the above 51 instances are reckoned as a summary punishment, and a soldier has a right to elect to be tried by district court-martial, instead of submitting to the award of his commanding officer. (Any deficiency of a soldier's necessaries and personal clothing which may exist at any time has to be made good as a matter of account between him and his captain.)

A soldier in respect of the award of stoppage of pay shall not be subjected to any deductions greater than is sufficient to make good the loss or damage. The total amount of the deductions shall not exceed such sum as will leave to the soldier, after paying for his messing and washing, less than one penny a day.

- 46. MINOR PUNISHMENTS.**—Confinement to barracks K. 493 may be awarded for any period not exceeding

fourteen days. Defaulters will be required to answer to their names at uncertain hours during the day, and will be employed on fatigues to the fullest practicable extent. They will attend parades and take all duties in regular turn. If not fully employed on fatigues they may be ordered punishment-drill during the first ten days of the award. Extra guards and piquets may be ordered as a punishment for minor irregularities when on, or parading for, those duties.

A private soldier may be admonished but is not to K. 493 be reprimanded. The admonition is not entered in K. 1921 the conduct sheet unless it be given in respect of the offence of drunkenness, or in cases entailing forfeiture of pay.

**47. COMBINED PUNISHMENTS.**—The preceding punishments K. 494 may be awarded severally or conjointly, subject to the following provisions :—

When detention exceeding seven days is awarded, a minor punishment must not be given in addition.

When an award includes detention and a minor punishment, the latter will take effect at the termination of the detention awarded.

A single award of detention, combined with confinement to barracks, must not exceed twenty-one days.

A soldier undergoing detention or confinement to barracks may for a fresh offence be awarded further punishment, provided that no soldier shall be awarded detention by summary award for more than twenty-eight consecutive days, and that the total consecutive punishment of detention and confinement to barracks shall not exceed forty-two days.

In the case of detention the further punishment will commence from the date of award ; in that of a minor punishment from the termination of the previous sentence. The following examples will serve as a guide :—

Private A. B. is sentenced to fourteen days' C.B. on January 1. On January 10 he is awarded a further seven days' C.B. His punishment does not expire till midnight on the 21st instant.

Private C. D. is sentenced to 14 days' C.B. on March 1. On the evening of March 10 he is put in the guard detention room, and the next morning he is given a further award of 168 hours D. He will be placed in the detention room or barracks on the 11th instant, and be released on the afternoon of the 18th instant, and be exempted from duty for the remainder of that day.

Private E. F. is sentenced to fourteen days' C.B. on June 1. On June 8 he is awarded forty-eight hours D. After completing the detention the soldier is confined to barracks up to midnight on June 14.

- 48. PUNISHMENT OF NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS.**—When an offence is of such a nature as to require *admonition* only, it should not be entered in K. 1921 the conduct book, except in cases involving forfeiture of pay. A non-commissioned officer is in a position of trust, and if he shows himself unworthy of it by committing a serious offence he should be warned as to his conduct, or, if that is insufficient, should be deprived of his post. In accordance with this view a commanding officer may otherwise treat the case by:—

(a) *Reprimand or severe reprimand.*

(b) *Deprivation of acting or lance rank* (whether paid K. 499 or not), but no summary or minor punishment is to S. 183 be added.

(c) *Deprivation of a position of the nature of an appointment.*—The sanction of an officer not below the rank of brigadier-general must be obtained if the soldier's permanent rank is higher than that of corporal. On removal from an appointment a soldier will revert to the ordinary duty of his permanent rank, remaining supernumerary until absorbed in the

first vacancy. When a non-commissioned officer, who has been removed from his appointment, is not in every respect qualified to perform the duties of his permanent rank, application may be made to the War Office for his reduction to a lower rank.

*No minor punishments.*—Non-commissioned officers K. 499 are not to be subjected to summary or minor punishments, nor to be punished by being placed at the bottom of the list of their rank, nor in any lower position therein than that they occupy.

Stopping leave or not recommending for promotion, or altering the ordinary roster for the purpose of giving additional guards or piquets for instructional purposes, are not recorded as punishments.

*Resignation of rank.*—Non-commissioned officers K. 301 may, with the permission of the commanding officer, resign their rank and revert to the rank or position they may have previously held, but are not allowed to do so in order to escape trial by court-martial without special sanction from an officer not below the rank of brigadier-general.

*Report on Conviction.*—When a non-commissioned officer is convicted of an offence by the civil power, the case is to be reported to an officer not below the rank of brigadier-general, with a view to obtaining the special authority of the Army Council for the S.183(2) reduction of the offender, if such a course should be thought necessary.

49. **WARRANT OFFICERS** and persons subject to military law who do not belong to His Majesty's forces S. 182 cannot be punished by a commanding officer or tried by a regimental court-martial. S. 184
50. **AWARDING PUNISHMENT.**—A punishment is M.iv 36 deemed to be awarded when a soldier is marched outside the orderly-room or out of the immediate presence of the punishing officer.

When an award is once given it cannot be increased R. 6

for the same offence, although it may be mitigated R. 7 or remitted, nor can the soldier be recalled for the purpose of remanding him for a court-martial. If, O'D. however, a commanding officer inflicts an unsuit- 139 able punishment through a *misapprehension of the facts* of the case, the award would not be a bar to future proceedings.

In awarding punishment a commanding officer must think of the subsequent effect of his award. This will depend mainly on whether the punishment P.W. entails a forfeiture of good conduct badges or not. 1021

In dealing with cases of absence without leave, K. 502 regard must be paid to the circumstances of the absence, and the manner in which the soldier came back. The absence terminates when the soldier is taken into custody, and any delay in disposing of the 177 case must be made allowance for in awarding punishment. Cases of absence over twenty-one days would generally be tried by court-martial.

*Illegal award.*—If it appears to an officer not below K. 507 the rank of brigadier-general that the summary award of a C.O. is illegal or excessive, he may, at his discretion, within two years of the date of the award, direct either that it be cancelled and the entry in the conduct books expunged, or that the punishment be reduced.

51. **TRIAL BY COURT-MARTIAL.**—When a command- S. 46 ing officer, after hearing the evidence, proposes to R. 7 dispose of an offence committed by a private soldier, M. iv he shall, in every case where the award or the find- 35 ing involves a forfeiture of pay, and in every other case unless he awards a minor punishment, ask the soldier charged whether he desires to be dealt with summarily or to be tried by district court-martial. Unless there are reasons against the adoption of such a course, a soldier may, on the following day, be given an opportunity of reconsidering his decision to be tried by court-martial.

If a commanding officer omits to ask the soldier R. 7 whether he desires to be dealt with summarily or to be tried by a district court-martial, the soldier may, at any time on the same day, before the hour fixed for the commitment and release of prisoners, claim his right to be tried by court-martial.

A soldier cannot demand trial by court-martial on the ground that a minor punishment entails forfeiture of good conduct badges, nor can a soldier who is remanded for a regimental court-martial S.(46) 8 legally claim to be tried by a district court-martial. (N)

The right to demand trial by district court-martial is restricted to private soldiers.

- 52. ONLY ONE TRIAL.**—An offender who has been acquitted or convicted by a civil court or court-martial, S. 46 or who has been dealt with summarily by his commanding officer, cannot again be tried by court- S. 157 martial or punished by his commanding officer for S. 162 the same offence.

This does not, however, prevent a subsequent trial O'D. taking place if the offence punished leads to some 138 other offence of a more serious character. For instance, a man might be summarily punished for assault, but the fact of his being so punished would not prevent his being tried for an offence of manslaughter which arose directly from the assault.

No conviction by a military court exempts an 61 offender from being subsequently tried for the same offence by a civil court.

The fact of a magistrate having refused to deal O'D. with an offence is no bar to its trial by a military 139 tribunal.

- 53. POWER OF COMPANY OFFICERS.**—Officers commanding companies may admonish and reprimand (but not severely reprimand) N.C. officers below the rank of sergeant, and may award private soldiers punishment not exceeding seven days' confinement K. 499

to barracks, extra guards and piquets, and the regulated fines for drunkenness. In the case of officers of less than 3 years' service the power of award may be limited by the commanding officer to three days' confinement to barracks. The award of punishment is entered in A.F. B. 281, and on the last day of each week these forms will be sent to the orderly-room for supervision by the commanding officer, and will be subsequently attached to the guard report for that day. For all minor offences, including absence without leave where pay is automatically forfeited, a company officer may award any punishment within his ordinary powers.

K. 485

- 54. OFFICERS ON DETACHMENT.**—The commanding officer of a detachment has full powers of punishment, but this power may be restricted to any extent in the case of officers below the rank of substantive major by the commanding officer of the unit from which the detachment is furnished, if it be serving in the same command, or otherwise by the officer commanding the garrison or station.

K. 457

In cases of emergency, however, the commanding officer of a detachment can exercise his full powers notwithstanding any restrictive order, but in such cases an immediate report of the action taken should be made to the authority by whom the restrictive order was issued.

## CHAPTER VI

### *JURISDICTION OF COURTS-MARTIAL*

- 55. COURTS-MARTIAL**—Three Ordinary—One Exceptional. 56. **THEIR JURISDICTION**. 57. As to PLACE—On board Ship—Ship in Commission. 58. As to TIME—Exceptional Cases. 59. As to OFFENCES—Civil Offences—The Courts used. 60. As to OFFENDERS. 61. IN CONFLICT WITH CIVIL LAW. 62. SECOND TRIALS.
- 55. COURTS-MARTIAL**.—When an offence is of a character too serious to be disposed of summarily by a commanding officer, the accused is brought before a court-martial.
- Three ordinary*.—There are three kinds of courts-martial, which are analogous as regards their power of dealing with offences to the High Courts of the civil law, the Quarter Sessions, and the Petty Sessions. These are :—
- (1) General courts-martial.
  - (2) District courts-martial.
  - (3) Regimental courts-martial.
- One exceptional*.—There is besides an exceptional court termed a field general court-martial, which can only be assembled under special circumstances, when it is impracticable to convene an ordinary general court-martial. Its jurisdiction, procedure, and powers of punishment will be dealt with separately. 260
- 56. THEIR JURISDICTION**.—Military courts are instituted in order to deal with serious offences against

military discipline, committed by persons subject to military law. The maximum punishments which can be inflicted by them are laid down in the Army Act and their powers are otherwise limited in several ways. The jurisdiction of the civil courts when they are regularly administered is only interfered with in the exceptional cases authorised by the Act.

- 57. AS TO PLACE.**—An offence, irrespective of the place S. 159 of commission, can be tried anywhere within the jurisdiction of an officer authorised to convene general courts-martial.

*On board ship.*—When troops are embarked on S. 188 board ship they carry with them the military law that exists at the port of embarkation, and courts can be convened and offenders tried in accordance with that law. As soon as the voyage is over they come under the law that holds good at the place of landing, and the confirmation or carrying out of a sentence passed on board ship which has not already been dealt with is finished according to the provisions of that law. Troops on board a transport en route for the seat of war can be considered as on S. 189 active service.

*Ship in commission.*—Courts-martial, cannot, however, be held on board ships in commission, with the exception of a regimental court for the trial of a non-commissioned officer. In order to try other cases by court-martial an offender must be transferred to a ship not in commission or the trial must be delayed till a landing on shore can be effected.

- 58. AS TO TIME.**—No person can be tried for an offence S. 161 if *three years* have passed since its commission, and S. 158 if the offender has ceased to be subject to military law the trial must take place within *three months* of the date of his ceasing to be so subject.

The limitation as to three months applies especially S.R.150 to men who are discharged or transferred to the T.R.246

reserve, or who constantly change their status from soldier to civilian, as in the case of special reservists and the territorial forces.

A person who is sentenced to penal servitude or imprisonment or detention is subject to military law as long as his sentence lasts, notwithstanding that he has ceased to be subject to military law by reason of his discharge, dismissal, or otherwise. S. 158

*Exceptional cases.*—The following cases are excepted: 155

(1) Desertion on active service and mutiny can be 161 tried at any time.

(2) Desertion (not on active service) and fraudulent 170 enlistment can also be always tried, unless a man K. 489 has served continuously in an exemplary manner S. 161 (*i.e.*, had no entry in his regimental conduct sheet) for three years since the commission of the offence.

Certain offences of army reservists, special reservists and men of the territorial force in reference to a failure R.F.A. to comply with orders as to the assembly of these 26 forces, absence without leave, false statements on T.F.A. attestation, and contravention of the enlistment laws, 25 which can be tried by either civil or military courts, 61 can be tried at any time within two months after the 152 offence has become known to the officer who can dispose of it, and, if the offender be not then apprehended, 174 within two months after his apprehension. 180

**59. AS TO OFFENCES.**—Courts-martial have the power to punish any military offence and any offence against the civil law which is specially mentioned in the Army Act, such as sedition, assault, theft, damage to property, and offences against enlistment and billeting, etc., subject to certain restrictions as to the power and jurisdiction of the particular court employed.

*Civil offences.*—They have also power to punish any S. 41 civil offence punishable by the law of England, sub- 192 subject to the additional limitation that the five crimes of treason, treason-felony, murder, manslaughter,

and rape can *never* be tried in the United Kingdom, and elsewhere, only on active service, or out of His Majesty's dominions, or at Gibraltar or (if within His Majesty's dominions) at any place more than 100 miles from a competent civil court. The above restrictions do not apply to the jurisdiction of field S. 49 general courts-martial, which have power under certain circumstances to try any offence.

*The courts used.*—Regimental courts-martial should K. 487 only try the offences which can be dealt with sum- 39 marily by a commanding officer, unless special per- 37 mission is obtained from superior authority by the commanding officer who convenes the court.

They can also punish a soldier for a minor civil 192 offence, such as assault on a civilian, injury to private property, etc., under Section 40; but in all cases of trial under Section 41 reference must be made K. 487 to a superior. On account of the extensive powers of commanding officers the assembly of regimental courts-martial should be rarely necessary; and for cases not summarily disposed of, a district court-martial should as a rule be convened.

District courts-martial have sufficient power of punishment to deal with all ordinary military offences. The higher tribunal of a general court-martial is not resorted to except in cases of very aggravated offences, K. 552 when, owing to the state of discipline or the bad character of the offender, a severe punishment may be required, and for offences committed by officers.

- 60. AS TO OFFENDERS.**—Any person amenable to military law, whether he belongs to a body of troops or is simply attached to them, can be tried by court-martial, subject to the restrictions that district courts-martial cannot try anyone holding the position S. 182 of an officer, and that regimental courts-martial cannot S. 184 try warrant officers, or (in any ordinary case) non- K. 438 commissioned officers above the rank of corporal

(except on board H.M. ships), or persons not belonging to His Majesty's forces.

Care must be taken that in the trial of marines 10 and persons belonging to His Majesty's Indian Army 18 the provisions of the Naval Discipline Act and the 78 Indian Articles of War are not contravened. 137

**61. IN CONFLICT WITH CIVIL LAW.**—When a soldier commits an offence against the civil law, he is, as a rule, handed over to that law to be punished. If he is not taken into custody but held to bail he is liable to military duty while so held. A civil court can S. 144 claim to try any man who has committed a crime against civil law punishable by fine or imprisonment, and can order the removal from the army S. 96 under certain conditions of an apprentice under S. 97 twenty-one years of age, or of an indentured labourer, but cannot take a soldier out of the army on account of a fine, debt, or damage under 30*l.*, or for a breach of contract resulting from his enlistment.

No conviction by a military court exempts an S. 162 offender from being subsequently tried by a civil 52 court, but in awarding punishment the court shall have regard to the amount of punishment already S. 46 undergone. On the other hand, a person who has been acquitted or convicted by a civil court or court-martial, or who has been dealt with summarily by a commanding officer, cannot again be tried by court- S. 157 S. 162 martial or punished by a commanding officer for the same offence.

In the case of offences under the Acts dealing with 52 the territorial and reserve forces, which are cognisable 58 by both civil and military law, men of the territorial 152 and reserve forces cannot be tried by civil courts (1) if they have been previously tried for the same offence by court-martial or dealt with summarily by a commanding officer; (2) in the case of a territorial, without T.R.250 the consent of his commanding officer or an authority superior to him; (3) in the case of a reserve man, S.R.176

without the consent of an officer who has power to direct his trial by court-martial, or some authority superior to that officer.

- 62. SECOND TRIALS.**—A person who has been ac- S. 157 quitted or convicted of an offence by a court-martial shall not be liable to be tried again by a court-martial in respect of that offence.

The principle of law is that a man shall not be S. 157 tried twice in respect of the same offence. The test S. 56 question as to the legality of a second trial is this : Would the evidence produced on the second trial have sufficed to obtain a conviction upon the first ? If so, the second trial is illegal and void. Where on the second trial the charge is for a different offence, or the particulars refer to a different set of facts, the second trial is valid, but an offence of which under S. 56 the man could have been convicted on the first trial is not a different offence.

When a court is illegally constituted—as, for S. 157 example, if convened by an officer not authorised to convene it, or if composed of too few members—it is no court at all, and therefore the accused will not really have been tried, and may be tried again.

Where a court is originally legally constituted but S. 54 the trial is not completed, by reason of the proceedings not being confirmed, there has been *no conviction*, and the accused may be tried again.

But although, as a general principle, the non-confirmation of a conviction enables a man to be tried again, such a course should only be adopted when a technical irregularity (which cannot be conveniently amended by revision) causes injustice to the accused —*e.g.*, if the plea of a soldier to a charge of desertion is that he was guilty, but intended to return, and this plea has been recorded as guilty, though amounting to a plea of not guilty.

In the following exceptional cases a man can without injustice be tried again by a fresh court ; a

court is dissolved before the finding, or, in the case where the finding is guilty, before the sentence, by reason of insufficiency of members, the absence of the president, or the illness of the prisoner ; the provisions of R. 35 (B) or R. 37 (D) have not been complied with ; a revision of the finding is necessary and it is impossible to re-assemble the original court ; a finding of insanity, or the overruling of a special plea to jurisdiction or in bar of trial is not confirmed ; the proceedings of a court are lost before confirmation and the authorised substitute for them cannot be obtained.

Where a court-martial is dissolved by reason of insufficiency of members, the absence of the president, or the illness of the accused, it may frequently be inexpedient to convene a new court, especially if the offender has been a long time in arrest or confinement.

Where a man is retried on the same charges the confirming officer will take care that the punishment awarded is not more severe than that awarded at the first trial.

A confirming officer who was dissatisfied with the sentence of a court-martial would not be justified in refusing to confirm its proceedings, and then assembling another court to try the accused again for the same offence. In no case should an accused be retried on account of the failure of the prosecution in the first trial.

The record of conviction is sometimes removed either before or after promulgation by competent authority, on the ground of illegality. If the illegality in question has reference to the procedure of the court, or the improper admission of evidence, it does not alter the fact that the accused has been legally convicted by a court which has proper jurisdiction, and hence he cannot be tried again for the same offence. If, however, the proceedings were

annulled on account of the court not having jurisdiction (being illegally convened or being composed of officers not competent to try the offender or the offence), the accused could be tried again, as the court was not legal, and hence he has not really been tried at all. It has been ruled that when a trial is completed by confirmation and promulgation, the accused shall not again be tried by a second court.

In the United Kingdom and elsewhere when the K. 591 case admits of reference without undue delay the proceedings of courts-martial that have been confirmed will not be quashed without reference to the Judge-Advocate General.

## CHAPTER VII

### *COMPOSITION OF COURTS-MARTIAL*

- 63. COMPOSITION OF COURTS.**—Courts-martial are S. 47 composed of a number of commissioned officers, the S. 48 senior of whom is termed the president. To each R. 19 court is assigned a legal minimum of officers, and each member must have a certain amount of service :—
- 64. QUALIFICATIONS OF MEMBERS**—Branch of Service—Disqualification. 65. QUALIFICATION OF PRESIDENT—A Combatant Officer. 66. DUTIES OF PRESIDENT—As to Charges—Evidence—Votes—Summoning Witnesses—Clearing Court. 67. FORMATION OF COURTS.

Numbers of members in United Kingdom, India, Malta, and Gibraltar	G.C.M.	D.C.M.	R.C.M.
	9	3	3
Number of members else—			
where . . . .	5	3	3
Minimum length of mem- bers' service in years .	3	2	1

An officer is not to be detailed to sit on a court- K. 572 martial unless he is, in the opinion of his commanding officer, competent, nor, when it can be avoided, unless he has previously attended as a supernumerary at least twenty-five times.

For the trial of doubtful or complicated cases a K. 576 district court-martial should consist of five or more officers, and waiting members should be detailed if

necessary. When composed of three members, not more than one is to be a subaltern.

On a general court-martial two or four additional members should be provided, as well as waiting members, and five at least of the members must be R. 21 not below the rank of captain.

**64. QUALIFICATIONS OF MEMBERS.**—A member is S. 50 not *eligible* to serve on a court-martial unless he is a R. 19 commissioned officer of sufficient rank and service as above, and is subject to military law. Members may belong to the same or different corps, and a regimental court-martial need not necessarily be composed of officers of one regiment. General and district courts-martial should, however, if practicable, be R. 20 formed of officers of different corps, and should never be composed of officers of the same regiment of cavalry or battalion of infantry unless the impossibility of procuring other officers is stated in the order convening the court.

*Rank.*—Members of a court-martial for the trial of R. 21 an officer should be of equal, if not superior, rank to that officer.

For the trial of a commanding officer as many K. 578 members as possible should have held a similar position.

For the trial of a subaltern not more than two officers of subaltern rank should be detailed as members of the court.

A subaltern can in no case sit on a court for the S. 48 trial of a field officer.

*Branch of service.*—Officers of marines when subject S. 179 to military law and British officers of His Majesty's S. 180 Indian forces can sit on courts-martial; but officers S. 175 of the Navy cannot, as they are not under the Army S. 190 Act. (8)

Officers of the special reserve of officers, of special reserve units and of the territorial forces, can sit with S. 178 officers of the regular forces to try offenders irre-

spective of whether they belong to the regular forces or not.

When trying an accused person belonging to the R. 20 special reserve or to the territorial forces, at least one member should, if practicable, belong to those forces, and to the same branch as that to which the accused belongs. A regular officer who is adjutant of a special reserve unit or of a territorial unit is not considered an officer of those corps for the purposes of this rule.

There is no regulation against non-combatant officers sitting as members of a court provided they are otherwise qualified.

*Disqualification.*—An officer is *disqualified* from S. 50 serving on a court-martial if he is the convening or R. 19 investigating\* officer, the prosecutor or witness for the prosecution, the commanding officer of the accused, or of his corps, a member of a court of inquiry respecting the matters on which the charges against the accused are founded, or an officer who has a personal interest in the case.

**65. QUALIFICATION OF PRESIDENT.**—A president must, of course, be qualified as a member, but in addition he must have a rank suitable to the dignity of the court over which he presides.

The president is always appointed by name, and after the court is sworn cannot be displaced, even although promotion or accidental circumstances may cause a member to be senior to him in rank.

The president of a general court-martial should be K. 578 a general officer or a colonel if available, otherwise a field officer, but in no case an officer under the rank S. 48 of captain.

To a district court-martial a field officer should be S. 48 appointed if available, otherwise a captain, but in K. 558

---

\* The term includes the officer who takes down the summary of evidence, and the company commander who makes the preliminary inquiry.

cases of great emergency a subaltern can sit. The S. 47 president of a regimental court-martial should not be under the rank of captain, except on the line of march, on board ship, or when a captain is, with due regard to the public service, not available.

When an officer of proper rank (captain for regimental and field officer for the higher courts) cannot be obtained, the fact must be stated in the order convening the court.

The president of a court for the trial of a warrant S. 182 officer must in no case be under the rank of captain.

*Non-combatant officers*.—A departmental officer K. 229 serving in his department, whether on his combatant M. v 14 or other commission, is not entitled to the presidency of courts-martial, but still he is legally qualified if duly appointed. In practice, however, a combatant officer is always appointed, except in the case of regimental courts-martial dealing with cases where a military command is authorised.

**66. DUTIES OF PRESIDENT.**—The president is necessarily R. 59 the senior officer, and is responsible that the trial is conducted with due decorum, and in a manner befitting a court of justice. It is his duty to see that justice is administered, and that the accused has a fair trial and does not suffer any disadvantage through ignorance or incapacity to examine witnesses or to make his own evidence clear or intelligible.

He is responsible that the members are present 82 and seated according to rank, that the usual books 84 and documents are on the table, and that proper R. 22 inquiries are made by the court as to its legal R. 23 constitution, the amenability to trial of the accused, and the validity of the charge.

The president is the mouthpiece of the court, reads out all orders and charges, and is the channel of communication by which its decision or opinion is made known.

Like the judge of a civil court he should act as

counsel for an accused not defended by counsel. He will therefore cause to be called before the court any witness whom he considers able to give material evidence, but he has no power to call the accused as a witness. He administers the oath to the members R. 80 of the court, writes the proceedings or directs a R. 95 member of the court to do so, and is responsible for R. 96 the accuracy of the record of the proceedings, and R. 97 also for their safe custody and transmission to proper 134 authority.

The record of the proceedings must be clearly written. If it is necessary to make any corrections, they should be verified by the president's initials.

The termination of the proceedings, whether the R. 45 last act be the finding or the sentence, must be R. 50 signed and dated by the president. R. 57

*As to charges.*—The president has the original R. 17 charge sheet and summary or abstract of evidence sent to him before the court assembles, and if he thinks any amendment in the charges is required he should communicate with the convening officer.

*Evidence.*—During the trial he should compare the R. 59 evidence given by the witnesses with the summary of evidence, and if there be any material difference he should question the witnesses about it. He should put to witnesses (including the accused if he gives evidence) any questions which appear to him necessary or desirable to elicit the truth. In particular he should put questions to the accused (if he gives evidence) for the purpose of enabling him to explain any facts appearing in the evidence for the prosecution ; but he must not cross-examine the accused, and should not put questions to him with a view to supplement the evidence for the prosecution.

All interpolated or extra questions put to a witness, R. 85 by leave of the court, must be put through the R. 86 president.

*Votes.*—The president collects the votes of the S. 53 members, commencing with the junior in rank. He R. 69

has a casting vote in every case of an equality of 116 opinions after the commencement of the trial (*i.e.*, 127 after the arraignment of the accused) except as to the *finding* and a sentence of death.

In cases which may arise before the trial has commenced, such as that of challenge of members, he has no casting vote.

*Summoning witnesses.*—The president, *after* the court R. 78 has assembled, takes the proper steps to procure the attendance of any witnesses that may be wanted and have not before been summoned or ordered to attend. Witnesses not subject to military law can also be summoned by him prior to the assembly of the court.

*Clearing court.*—The president can order the court S. 53 to be cleared at any time for the purposes of deliberation, R. 63 and no person can remain present except the members of the court, the judge-advocate, and officers under instruction. A court, if more convenient, may withdraw from the place where they are sitting and assemble elsewhere.

**67. FORMATION OF COURTS.** In the order convening a court-martial the president is appointed by name. The members and waiting members may be mentioned by name, or their number, ranks, and mode of appointment may alone be recorded. The name of the judge-advocate (if any) who has been appointed is also mentioned.

The duty of appointing a prosecutor devolves also R. 24 on the convening officer, but neither the judge- R. 25 advocate nor the prosecutor forms a part of the court.

If before the accused is arraigned the full number R. 18 of officers detailed to form the court are from any cause not available to serve, the court should ordinarily adjourn for the purpose of fresh members being appointed ; but if the court are of opinion that in the interests of justice it is inexpedient to adjourn,

they may, if not reduced in number below the legal minimum, proceed, recording their reasons for so doing.

The formation of a court is in some cases affected by 64 the status of the accused, *e.g.*, in the trials of officers, 65 field officers, commanding officers, warrant officers, and members of the special reserve and territorial 60 forces. The description of court to be assembled depends mainly on the nature and character of the offence to be tried, but is also in some cases affected by the position of the accused, *e.g.*, in trials of officers, warrant officers, non-commissioned officers above the rank of corporal, and persons not belonging to H.M. Forces.

## CHAPTER VIII.

### *THE PROSECUTOR AND JUDGE-ADVOCATE.*

68. THE PROSECUTOR—Swearing of—Absence of—Objection to—Privileges of—As Witness.
69. DUTIES OF PROSECUTOR. 70. COUNSEL AS PROSECUTOR. 71. JUDGE-ADVOCATE—Qualification of—Swearing of—Absence of—Objection to—Presence in Closed Court—As Witness. 72. CIVILIAN JUDGE-ADVOCATE. 73. DUTIES OF JUDGE-ADVOCATE—Summing up—Summoning Witnesses—Examining Witnesses—Recording Proceedings—Custody and Transmission of Proceedings. 74. JUDGE-ADVOCATE GENERAL'S DEPARTMENT—Care of Proceedings.
68. THE PROSECUTOR.—On all trials where a counsel R. 24 does not appear a person subject to military law is appointed by the convening officer to prosecute. It is the usual custom that the prosecutor K. 573 should be a commissioned officer, and in ordinary cases the adjutant of the corps of the accused is told off to the duty. In complicated cases, and for trials by general courts-martial, an officer of experience is specially selected. A non-commissioned officer must not be detailed to prosecute unless it be shown that no officer is available.
- The convening officer must not appoint himself as S. 50 prosecutor, and the prosecutor must not be a member of the court, nor act as judge-advocate, nor can he confirm the proceedings.
- The prosecutor appears before the court in his R. 24 legal capacity when the accused is first brought in. M. v. 41

He may, however, be present at the preliminary proceedings, as a court-martial is essentially an open court.

*Swearing of.*—The prosecutor is not sworn unless called upon to give evidence as a witness.

*Absence of.*—The absence of the prosecutor at any stage of the proceedings does not affect their legality.

*Objection to.*—The accused cannot object to the R. 25 prosecutor, as he does not form a part of the court.

*Privileges of.*—In order to properly carry out his M. iv duties the prosecutor should have a copy of, or at all 30 events access to, the charges and summary of evidence a reasonable time before the court sits.

The prosecutor is entitled to have the opinion of R. 103 the judge-advocate on any point of law.

*As witness.*—A prosecutor should not, if possible, be 234 called upon to give evidence for the prosecution ; R. 39 but if such a course is necessary he should give his evidence before that of any other witness, and care should be taken that his sworn statement as a witness should be kept quite distinct from any statements made by him in his address as prosecutor. A prosecutor must not be allowed to swear that the matters referred to in his address are *as a whole* true. There is no objection to a prosecutor being called on as a witness for the defence.

69. DUTIES OF PROSECUTOR.—It is the duty of a prosecutor to prove every essential part of his case by sworn evidence. At the same time he has to R. 60 assist the court in the administration of justice and K. 575 to behave impartially. He is an official whose duty it is to see that justice is done, and not a partisan whose object is to convict the accused. He should call witnesses to prove the charges irrespective of whether they are favourably inclined to the accused or not, and he must be careful not to omit taking evidence which may show the innocence of the accused or extenuate his crime.

He must take care not to bring forward evidence which is not relevant to the charge, and which may tend to prejudice the accused with the court, while all facts which tend to make the case clear should be entered into. He must not comment on the fact that the accused has not applied to give evidence himself, but he would be justified in pointing out that R. 41 the accused did not give his evidence until after he had heard the evidence of his own witnesses. If the charges against a soldier do not allege drunkenness, K. 575 and he was drunk when he committed the offence, the fact should be brought out in evidence.

In cases of alleged desertion, the fact of the R. 46 soldier having surrendered or been apprehended is material to the issue, and should be proved by the prosecutor.

In cases where the evidence is at all complicated R. 39 every particular essential to constitute the offence charged should be proved step by step; e.g., on a charge of making false accusations it is desirable to prove in regular stages (1) that the accusation was made by the accused, (2) that it was false, (3) that the accused made it knowing it was false.

If the accused has elected to be tried instead of App. II. submitting to a summary award of his commanding officer, the prosecutor will inform the court before arraignment takes place.

The prosecutor examines his own witnesses and 99 cross-examines those of the accused, and explains his case by means of addresses if necessary. On him R. 14 would usually fall the duty of warning the accused for trial.

Where the finding of a court renders the accused R. 46 liable to any exceptional punishment in addition to that to be awarded by the court, it will be the duty of the prosecutor to inform the members of the fact.

- 70. COUNSEL AS PROSECUTOR.**—A properly qualified R. 88 counsel can appear on behalf of the prosecutor at 103

general and district courts-martial, and such counsel shall assume the position of prosecutor, with all its K. 455 advantages and disadvantages.

When counsel appears for the prosecution, at R. 89 least seven days' notice before the trial must be given to the accused.

**71. JUDGE-ADVOCATE.**—Officers authorised to convene general courts-martial out of the United Kingdom are by the terms of their warrants authorised to appoint judge-advocates to attend court-martial. **79**

Judge-advocates must always be present at general R. 101 courts-martial, and may, if deemed expedient (in cases where the evidence is complicated), be ordered to attend district courts.

When the trial takes place at home, one of the deputy judge-advocates (who are military officers) is ordered to attend by the judge-advocate general upon application being made to him. The judge-advocate general may, however, if he thinks proper, depute any qualified officer to officiate as judge-advocate at a trial.

In the case of a trial abroad a fit person is appointed by the officer convening the court. The proceedings of a court-martial are not invalid owing R. 101 to any irregularity in the manner of appointing a judge-advocate, provided he is a fit person.

The judge-advocate must be present when the court assembles, and it will be one of the first duties R. 22 of the court to see that he is duly appointed.

*Disqualification of.*—An officer who is disqualified R. 101 to sit on a court-martial as a member cannot act as **64** judge-advocate.

*Swearing of.*—A judge-advocate is duly sworn at S. 52 the same time as the rest of the court (see Form of R. 27 Oath).

*Absence of.*—When a judge-advocate has been ap- R. 65 pointed, the court cannot proceed unless he is present. If a judge-advocate falls ill or is unable to attend, a R. 102

fit person may be appointed to replace him during the remainder of the trial. Care must be taken that the substitute is duly sworn.

*Objection to.*—The judge-advocate, if properly appointed, cannot be objected to by the accused. R. 25

*Presence in closed court.*—The judge-advocate remains present when the court is closed for deliberation. R. 63

*As witness.*—He can be called on as a witness for the defence, but not for the prosecution. R. 50 R. 77

- 72. CIVILIAN JUDGE-ADVOCATE.**—Counsel may be appointed to act as a judge-advocate, but such civilian must not be the prosecutor or witness for the prosecution, and should be free from bias or prejudice, and possess some acquaintance with military law. R. 89 R. 103 R. 101

When it is deemed expedient to call in the aid of counsel, it is more desirable that he should assist the military judge-advocate than that he should replace him. This course was adopted in the Fenian Sm. 463 trials in Ireland in 1866.

- 73. DUTIES OF JUDGE-ADVOCATE.**—At a court-martial the judge-advocate represents the judge-advocate general, and should maintain an entirely impartial position as the legal adviser of all parties connected with the trial. He should inform the convening officer and court of any defect in the charge or any informality in the constitution of the court. R. 103

He is responsible for informing the court as to any want of legality and formality of the proceedings, and the court should be guided by his opinion on any point of law or procedure that arises during the trial.

The court itself is responsible for the legality of its proceedings, and must consider the grave consequences which may result from disregard of advice given them on legal points.

Any information or advice given by the judge-advocate to the court must, if he or they wish it, be entered in the proceedings.

The judge-advocate, equally with the president, R. 59 must take care that the accused does not suffer any R. 103 disadvantage in consequence of his ignorance or incapacity ; and, to elicit the truth, he may, with permission of the court, call witnesses or put questions to witnesses as he thinks fit.

It is part of his duty to swear in the court and R. 26 administer oaths and declarations to witnesses. R. 82

Both the prosecutor and the accused are entitled to ask the opinion of the judge-advocate on any question of law that is relative to the trial.

*Summing up.*—After the conclusion of the case the R. 42 judge-advocate will sum it up, unless he and the court think a summing up unnecessary, and after his summing up no further address is allowed.

The summing-up, if in writing, is attached to the R. 95 proceedings, and, if not in writing, such *précis* of it as the judge-advocate thinks necessary is recorded.

In his summing-up he may comment on the fact that the accused did not apply to give evidence himself, or on the fact that he chose to give evidence after hearing the evidence of other witnesses for the defence.

*Summoning Witnesses.*—The judge-advocate has the R. 78 power of summoning witnesses not subject to military law, but it is rarely exercised at home, it being more convenient to leave such matters to the convening officer or president.

*Examining witnesses.*—The judge-advocate can examine and cross-examine witnesses in the usual R. 85 way, or may ask questions through the president.

*Recording proceedings.*—The judge-advocate is responsible for a proper record of the proceedings in R. 95 writing, and in important cases may have the assistance of a sworn shorthand writer.

Reporters are allowed to be present and take notes M. v 71

as long as the court is open. It is not usual to place any restrictions on them, but the court has a right to forbid any publication of its proceedings till after the close of the trial.

*Custody of proceedings.*—As long as the court sits R. 96 the custody of the proceedings is in charge of the judge-advocate, and they may be inspected by the prosecutor, the accused and the members of the court at any time up to the finding.

He should sign the proceedings after the president R. 45 has done so, take charge of them, and forward them R. 50 to the authority mentioned in the order convening R. 97 court.

*Transmission of proceedings.*—If held in the United 184 Kingdom, the proceedings of general courts-martial K. 592 are to be forwarded to the judge-advocate general for confirmation by His Majesty ; if held abroad, to the general or other officer who has power to confirm the proceedings, who, if he has not the power to confirm will forward them to the Judge-Advocate General. District courts-martial are forwarded to the confirming officer.

After confirmation the proceedings of all general and district courts-martial are forwarded to the judge advocate-general.

#### 74. JUDGE-ADVOCATE GENERAL'S DEPARTMENT. M. ix

—The judge-advocate general is now a permanent 58 official acting as legal adviser to the Secretary of State ; he is no longer a Privy Councillor, nor does he advise the Crown directly.

In the case of general courts-martial in the United R. 17 Kingdom the charge and summary of evidence R. 101 should be submitted to him, and he appoints the M. 599 judge-advocate to the court and advises the Secretary of State as to these and other general courts-martial, which are forwarded for confirmation by His Majesty.

The deputy judge-advocates are military officers

who attend courts-martial as the representatives of the judge-advocate general.

The judge-advocate general's department carefully inspects the proceedings of the general, field-general, and district courts-martial, brought before it, and if any illegality has taken place, brings it to the notice of the confirming or superior officer, who has the power to amend the fault in question.

In the case of the marines the judge-advocate S. 179 general's department is represented by the Admiralty.

*Care of proceedings.*—The proceedings of general R. 98 courts-martial are kept in the judge-advocate general's department for seven years, and those of S. 124 district and field-general courts-martial for three R. 99 years. Copies of the proceedings can be obtained on S. 165 payment by the person tried, and a certified copy is admissible in evidence.

## CHAPTER IX

### *ASSEMBLY OF COURTS-MARTIAL*

75. PRELIMINARY PROCEEDINGS. 76. APPLICATION FOR COURT-MARTIAL. 77. DELAY IN ASSEMBLY. 78. CONVENING AUTHORITY. 79. WARRANTS—Delegated Warrants. 80. DUTY OF CONVENING OFFICER—Charges—Summary or Abstract of Evidence—Witnesses—Nature of Court—Order Assembling Court—Appointing Officers. 81. WARNING THE ACCUSED. 82. ASSEMBLY OF COURT—Seating of Members—Preliminaries. 83. HOUR OF SITTING. 84. LEGAL INQUIRIES BY COURT. 85. THE ACCUSED.
75. PRELIMINARY PROCEEDINGS.—After investigating the charge against a soldier, a commanding officer, if he does not dispose of the case summarily, must, without unnecessary delay, which should not exceed thirty-six hours, either refer the case to superior authority, order a regimental court-martial to assemble, or apply to a superior to convene a higher court. R. 4 37 R. 5
76. APPLICATION FOR COURT-MARTIAL.—When making application to a convening officer for a district or general court-martial, the commanding officer forwards with it the charge-sheet, summary of evidence, company conduct sheets, list of witnesses to be called, and a statement as to character and particulars of service of the accused. A surgeon's certificate as to the ability of the accused to undergo imprisonment is appended. The names of the officers M. v 28 M. 604

who took part in the investigation of the case should be stated in the application, and in the event of the accused having elected to be tried instead of submitting to a summary award the fact should be noted M. 582 on the form. (Army Form B. 116.)

- 77. DELAY IN ASSEMBLY.**—A regimental court-martial should as a rule be assembled the day after R. 14 the charge has been investigated, care being taken R. 16 that there be an interval of not less than eighteen hours between the warning of the soldier for trial and his arraignment. The delay in ordering the 81 assembly of a regimental court-martial or in applying to a superior to convene a court-martial should not ordinarily exceed thirty-six hours.

In every case where an offender (not on active service) remains in military custody for a longer S. 45 period than eight days without a court-martial for R. 1 his trial being ordered to assemble, a special report K. 464 must be made by his commanding officer, to the general, or other convening officer, and a similar report shall be forwarded every eight days until a court-martial is assembled or the accused is released. The report will have to be sent by the commanding officer even though the fault of the delay lies with the officer to whom the report is to be made.

If a general or district court-martial is not assembled within fifteen days after the application for R. 17 it is received (or within thirty days if out of the United Kingdom), a report must be made by the convening officer to the Army Council (or if in India to the C. in Chief) explaining the reasons for the delay.

- 78. CONVENING AUTHORITY.**—A general court- S. 122 martial can be convened by His Majesty, by an S. 48 officer holding a warrant from His Majesty, or by an officer to whom power has been delegated by warrant from the officer originally given authority by His Majesty. A general court-martial for the trial of an S. 179

officer or soldier of the marines must under ordinary circumstances be convened by an officer holding a warrant from the Admiralty.

The convening officer of a general court-martial must be not below the degree of field officer, except in rare cases abroad, when a captain may be authorised by a special warrant.

*District* courts-martial can be convened by any S. 123 officer authorised to convene general courts-martial, S. 48 or by an officer who has received a warrant from such an authority.

The convening officer of a district court-martial must not be below the rank of captain.

*Regimental* courts-martial can be convened by any S. 47 officer authorised to convene the higher courts, by a commanding officer, or officer in command of two or more detachments, provided he be not under the rank of captain, and on board a ship by a commanding officer of any rank. If assembled on board a ship 57 in commission in order to try a non-commissioned M. 606 officer the permission of the captain of the ship is required.

The proper authority to convene a regimental K. 559 court-martial is the commanding officer of the accused, and officers senior to him who have occasion to order a case to be disposed of by this court should direct the commanding officer to convene it instead of doing so themselves.

If a commanding officer is unable to form an adequate court from the officers under his command he M. v 9 may apply to another detachment or corps for the officers required. He would usually, however, apply to the general or other senior officer in command of the district or station, who would convene a district court-martial. Except in the case of a R.C.M. the C.O. of the accused who has investigated the charge or remanded the case for trial cannot afterwards R. 17 act as convening officer.

**79. WARRANTS.**—The warrants above referred to which M. v 20 are now in force are those issued under the sign- 21 manual of the King and signed by the Secretary of State, and sent to Commanders-in-Chief in India, general officers commanding in the Colonies, and on active service, and at home to general officers commanding in chief and a few others.

Warrants vary in power according to whom they are addressed to.

The Commander-in-Chief in India has full powers M. v 95 to *convene and confirm* general courts-martial. Other general officers abroad have similar powers, subject to the restriction that they must refer for confirmation to the judge-advocate general for His Majesty's decision all sentences on officers (not native) of death, penal servitude, cashiering, and dismissal. Warrants issued to officers abroad authorise the appointment of judge-advocates and provost-marshals. S. 74

General officers commanding-in-Chief at home can only *convene* general courts-martial, and must transmit the proceedings to the judge-advocate general.

In the case of an army in the field, its commander would hold a special warrant which would probably empower him to confirm in all cases.

The fact of a warrant having been once issued to the commander of the troops at a foreign station is a sufficient authority to assemble a court-martial at any subsequent time at that station (as the warrants are not personal).

The Admiralty exercise the powers of the Crown S. 179 in relation to the navy, and therefore in the case of the marines are given powers as to warrants, etc., similar to those vested in His Majesty in relation to the army.

*Delegated warrants.*—Officers authorised to convene S. 122 general courts-martial abroad can delegate to an A.F.A.1 officer under their command, not under the rank of field officer (in exceptional cases abroad captain, by special warrant), their powers of convening and con-

firming general courts-martial, subject to the restriction that the sentence on officers before referred to cannot be confirmed by them; officers authorised to convene general courts-martial at home cannot delegate their power of doing so to anyone else. All officers authorised to convene general S. 123 courts-martial can convene and confirm district A.F.A.5 courts-martial, and can delegate their powers of so doing to an officer under their command (not under the rank of captain).

- 80. DUTY OF CONVENING OFFICER.**—The convening R. 17 officer must satisfy himself that the charges K. 567 made disclose an offence under the Army Act, and M. v 28 that the evidence forthcoming is sufficient to justify the trial of the accused.

*Charges.*—He can use his discretion in revising K. 568 and amending the charge-sheet, and can strike out R. 9 minor charges or those upon which he thinks—after perusing the summary of evidence—that sufficient 221 evidence is not forthcoming. If not satisfied that the charges can be legally sustained, he can either order the release of the accused or refer the case to superior authority.

The original charge-sheet and the order for the R. 17 assembly of the court-martial should be sent to the M. iv president of the court-martial, together with the sum- 30 mary or abstract of evidence, and the prosecutor should be either given copies of the charge-sheet and summary or allowed access to the originals.

The other documents forwarded with the application for a court-martial will be returned to the corps with the notice of trial.

*Witnesses.*—The convening officer must arrange R. 78 that any witnesses whose names have been forwarded to him are summoned or ordered to attend, provided their attendance can reasonably be procured.

The person requiring the attendance of a witness

may be required to defray the expenses thereby incurred.

*Nature of court.*—In deciding on the nature of the K. 548 court by which an accused is to be tried the convening officer can either refer the matter to superior authority, order the commanding officer to dispose of the case summarily or by regimental court-martial, or convene a general or district court-martial if he has the power to do so. In fixing on the particular K. 552 court the convening officer must keep in mind the nature of the offence, the character of the accused, the state of discipline at the time and place the offence was committed, and the particular circumstances of the case. There are but few crimes which cannot be effectually dealt with by district courts-martial, and the higher tribunal of a general court-martial should be reserved for cases of very aggravated offences requiring a severe punishment.

*Order assembling court.*—The order for the assembly Ap. II. of a particular kind of court-martial for the trial of the accused at a convenient time and place has then to be issued.

The president (and judge-advocate if any) is appointed by name, and the members and waiting members are either mentioned by name, or the number of officers of each rank and regiment to be furnished is stated. An officer or counsel is also usually R. 24 appointed to act as prosecutor. R. 89

The order closes with a notification that the accused are to be warned and witnesses required to attend, and states where the proceedings are to be sent.

*Appointing officers.*—General and district courts-martial are army courts as contrasted with regimental ones, which usually, though not necessarily, are formed from one corps. No district or general court must be formed from officers of one regiment of cavalry or battalion of infantry, if it is possible to get officers of different corps to sit. R. 20

In the case of a general court-martial, when a trial K. 576

is likely to be prolonged, it is usual to appoint two or four members more than the legal minimum, and waiting members should also be detailed to meet the case of reduction by challenge. For district and regimental courts-martial the legal minimum will ordinarily be sufficient, but if necessary a larger number may be detailed and waiting members provided. For the trial of doubtful or complicated cases a district-court-martial should, when possible, consist of five officers.

67

It must be remembered that no officers can be R. 68 added to a court after the accused is arraigned, and that a member who is absent while any portion of the evidence is being taken cannot again resume his seat.

81. WARNING THE PRISONER.—An accused for R. 13 whose trial a court-martial has been ordered to assemble should be afforded proper opportunities for preparing his defence. As soon as the charges are decided on, a copy of them should be forwarded to him, at least eighteen hours before the assembly of a R. 14 regimental court-martial, and twenty-four hours before that of a higher court. The charges should be explained to him, if necessary, and he should be asked M. v 32 for the names of his witnesses, and, if he demands it, be informed of the names of the officers who are to form the court, as well as those of officers in waiting. He is also entitled to have given him a true copy 237 of the summary of evidence. Notice must also be R. 15 given him if he is to be tried jointly with other 93 persons, in order that, by notice to the convening authority, he may be able to claim a separate trial. Each accused should also be told that, if he gives evidence himself, and in doing so gives evidence against another person charged with the same offence, he will be liable to be cross-examined as to character. But this liability will not of itself entitle the accused to claim to be tried separately.

Where counsel is to be employed by the prosecution, R. 89 at least seven days' notice must be given to the accused.

This notification or *warning* to the accused must be made personally by an officer, who is usually the prosecutor or an officer of the offender's own corps.

When an officer is to be tried, and a summary of R. 8 evidence has not been taken in his presence, he should be furnished by the convening officer with an abstract of the evidence to be adduced, at least R. 124 twenty-four hours before trial, and, if he demands it, a copy of the proceedings of any court of inquiry that may have investigated the case.

**82. ASSEMBLY OF COURT.**—The court assembles at the time and place mentioned in the order convening the court.

Officers attend courts-martial in the following dress :—General courts-martial, review order ; district courts-martial, undress order ; regimental court-martial, drill order. K. 1710

*Seating of Members.*—The president takes his place at the head of the table and sees that the members are seated according to their rank and seniority, the senior member being placed on his right hand, the next senior on his left and so on.

On district and general courts-martial seats will R. 58 be taken by army rank, but on a regimental court-martial, where officers of one regiment only are present, by regimental rank.

If an officer be promoted during trial, he changes his seat according to rank, but he can in no case displace the president, who remains president of the court till it is dissolved.

*Preliminaries.*—The president sees that all the R. 59 members and judge-advocate (if any) are present, and that the charge-sheet, summary of evidence, and the usual official books, orders, and papers are on

the table, and notes on the proceedings the hour at which the court opens.

**83. HOUR OF SITTING.**—Courts-martial can sit at any time between six and six, on any day except Sunday, Christmas Day, or Good Friday, but should not sit more than eight hours in a day. In the United Kingdom trials usually commence at ten or eleven o'clock and terminate at four or five o'clock. In cases of emergency a court can sit at any hour on any day.

**84. LEGAL INQUIRIES BY COURT.**—On the court assembling, the order convening the court shall be read, and also the names, rank, and corps of the officers appointed to serve on the court. (The order or a copy thereof is marked, signed by the president, and attached to the proceedings.)

The charge-sheet and summary of evidence are laid before the court.

It shall be the first duty of the court to satisfy themselves that the court is legally constituted, *i.e.*—

1. That it is properly convened.
  2. That the officers detailed are present, and are sufficient in number.
  3. That the regulations as to the rank and corps of officers have been observed, and that each of the officers assembled (including officers in waiting) is eligible, and not disqualified for serving on that court-martial.
  4. That the president is of the required rank and duly appointed.
  5. That the judge-advocate (if any) is duly appointed, and not disqualified.
- The court should next satisfy themselves—
1. That the accused is amenable to military law and to the jurisdiction of the court.
  2. That the charge discloses an offence under the Army Act, is properly framed, and is sufficiently explicit.

(The above inquiry by the court is not required to be, but may be, in closed court.)

The court, if not satisfied on any of the above matters, should report their opinion to the convening authority, and may adjourn for that purpose.

If before the accused is arraigned the full number R. 18 of officers detailed are, from any reason, not available to serve, the court should ordinarily adjourn for the purpose of fresh members being appointed; but if the court are of opinion that in the interests of justice it is inexpedient to adjourn, they may, if not reduced in number below the legal minimum, proceed, recording their reasons for so doing.

**85. THE ACCUSED.**—When the court R. 24 have satisfied themselves in the authorised manner, the prosecutor takes his place, and the accused, if not previously present, is brought before the court, attended by the officer or non-commissioned officer who has him in custody, or by an escort. (Both the prosecutor and the accused are usually present during the preliminary proceedings.)

Soldiers ordered for trial are to be examined by a K. 580 medical officer on the morning of each day that the 125 court is ordered to sit, and commanding officers will be held responsible that no soldier is brought before a court-martial if in the opinion of the medical officer he is unfit to undergo his trial.

Soldiers should not be handcuffed or fettered unless absolutely necessary.

If an officer is being tried he is usually allowed a M. v 43 seat, and the court can grant the same privilege to any accused if they think it necessary either from the length of the trial or other circumstances.

The names of the president and members are read over in the hearing of the accused, and they severally answer to their names.

## CHAPTER X

### *CHALLENGES—ARRAIGNMENT OF ACCUSED*

86. **THE CHALLENGE**—Trial of Several Persons. 87. VOTING ON OBJECTION. 88. OBJECTION TO MEMBER—To Interpreter. 89. OBJECTION TO PRESIDENT. 90. LIMITS TO OBJECTIONS. 91. GROUNDS FOR CHALLENGE. 92. SWEARING OF COURT—Trial of Several Persons. 93. ARRAIGNMENT OF ACCUSED—Joint Arraignment—Claim for Separate Trial. 94. PLEA TO JURISDICTION OF COURT. 95. PLEA IN BAR OF TRIAL. 96. PLEADING TO CHARGE.

**86. THE CHALLENGE**.—After the accused has heard R. 25 the names of the officers composing the court read S. 51 over he is asked if he objects to any of them. If he **90** does object he is asked to name *all* the officers against whom he desires to raise a protest.

The case of each officer objected to is decided on separately, the junior being taken first. If, however, the president is objected to, the objection to him will be disposed of before the objection to any other officer.

The accused may give evidence himself, and may R. 83 call witnesses to support his objection, and they can R. 84 be examined and cross-examined in the usual way, but as the court is not yet sworn it cannot administer an oath to the witnesses.

*Trial of several persons*.—When a number of ac- R. 71 cused persons have to be tried by one court, they may be all brought up together, and the question of objections be disposed of and the court sworn. Care

must be taken that each accused person is given an opportunity to object to the members of the court which will try his offence.

In the case of several accused persons to be tried separately, the court may proceed to determine any objection raised or may postpone the case, and swear the members of the court for the trial of those who do not object. Where persons are to be tried separately each case will be taken in succession.

- 87. VOTING ON OBJECTION.**—The court, after hearing and recording the statements made, may be R. 25 closed to consider the objection. M. v 44

All the officers present (except the one the objection to whom is being considered) then vote as to whether the objection shall be allowed or not.

(The officer objected to would usually withdraw, but need not necessarily do so.)

An objection to a member is allowed if one-half of S. 51 the votes of the other officers present are in favour of it. (The president has not a casting vote, as the trial S. 53 has not commenced.)

An objection to the president is allowed if supported by one-third of the other officers appointed to form the court.

An objection, if not unreasonable, should always be allowed, as a court should not only be impartial, but should be thought to be so by the accused and his comrades.

- 88. OBJECTION TO MEMBER.**—If the objection to a member is allowed he must retire. The vacancy is filled by one of the officers in waiting, and the accused must be given an opportunity of challenging any such new member. R. 25

If there are no waiting members, the court would R. 18 ordinarily adjourn and report to the convening officer, M. v 45 who would either appoint fresh members or convene another court. In case of emergency the court can,

however, go on if its numbers are not reduced below the legal minimum, but the reason for so acting must be recorded in the proceedings.

*To interpreter.*—An objection may be raised to an interpreter or shorthand writer on the ground that he is not impartial. A member of a court or the judge-advocate may act as interpreter, though it is not advisable, but the prosecutor should not do so, as a question might fairly arise as to his partiality.

89. **OBJECTION TO PRESIDENT.**—If the objection to the president is allowed, the court must adjourn and the convening officer can either appoint another president or convene another court. The senior member of the court, if of sufficient rank, and the court is not reduced below the legal minimum, may be appointed president. The accused has, of course, the right of challenge in respect of the new appointment.
90. **LIMITS TO OBJECTIONS.**—Persons who are being tried cannot object to the prosecutor or judge-advocate, or to a properly qualified counsel, as they do not form a part of the court.

The accused at this stage cannot object to the court as a *whole*, although subsequently, before pleading to a charge, he may offer a special plea to the general jurisdiction of the court. If the accused persists in objecting to the court collectively, it must be taken to mean that he objects to each officer individually, and such objections must be dealt with in the usual way.

91. **GROUND FOR CHALLENGE.**—The court has to decide on the reasonableness of the challenge from the *assertions* of the accused, the witnesses examined, and the officer objected to, though the latter, as a rule, is not called on to make a statement.

The ordinary grounds of challenge which an accused may fairly raise are, that a member—

- (1) Has a personal interest in the case.
- (2) Is prejudiced against the accused. R. 25
- (3) Has formed and expressed an opinion on the case.

An objection may also be raised to a member which is equivalent to a plea to the jurisdiction of the court (*e.g.* to his rank). In such a case the objection, if valid, should be allowed, though it might be raised subsequently on arraignment.

The slightest personal interest in the case would constitute a disqualification; for example, an officer cannot sit on the court for the trial of a man who has stolen property from the mess of his regiment. R. 19

When an officer is objected to on the ground of personal enmity, prejudice or malice, or for having formed and expressed an opinion on the case, he should, under ordinary circumstances, request permission to withdraw. It is always desirable to allow objections unless they are obviously groundless. R. 25

## **92. SWEARING IN OF COURT.**—When the challenges S. 52 have been disposed of the court is sworn in due form. R. 30

The oath is administered by the judge-advocate, R. 26 or, if a judge-advocate is not present, the president swears in the members, and afterwards one of the members swears in the president. The judge-advocate, R. 27 if present, is sworn by the president or a member of the court.

An interpreter or shorthand writer can be sworn either now or at any convenient time during the trial.

When any person has a sincere objection to take S. 52 the oath, a solemn declaration to the same effect as R. 28 the oath can be made.

*Trial of several persons.*—A court may be sworn to R. 71 try any number of accused persons then present before it. After the members are sworn each case is disposed of separately, and the accused persons not on their trial are removed from the court. The swearing of the court is to be recorded in the proceedings of each separate trial.

**93. ARRAIGNMENT.**—The witnesses, if in court, other than the prosecutor and the accused, are ordered out of court, and if the accused has elected to be tried instead of being dealt with summarily by his commanding officer, the prosecutor informs the court of the fact. The charges in the charge-sheet are then read out to the accused one by one, and he is asked to plead to them separately. When there is more than one charge-sheet, the arraignment and subsequent proceedings up to the finding should be taken on *each charge-sheet separately*. R. 81 R. 31 M. v 49 R. 62

Where there is more than one charge on a charge-sheet the accused may claim to be tried separately in respect of any charge or charges, and, if the claim is not unreasonable, the court deals with the charges as if they were on separate sheets. 222

*Joint arraignment.*—Any number of accused persons may be arraigned at the same time for an offence which they have committed collectively. Each accused person will be called on separately to challenge, to plead, and to make his defence, and a finding must be arrived at separately for each person accused, and each person accused found guilty must be separately sentenced, and a separate record accordingly will be made in the proceedings. The evidence on the part of all the accused persons will be taken before the prosecutor replies, and the prosecutor will make one address only in reply as regards all the persons being tried. R. 15 R. 71 R. 61

*Claim for separate trial.*—When arraigned before the court, an accused person who is being tried jointly with others can claim a separate trial on the ground that the evidence of some of the other accused persons is material to his defence. The court should allow the claim if it is reasonable and the charge admits of it. For instance, a separate trial could not be claimed by an accused who is charged with combining with others to excite a mutiny or form a conspiracy. R. 15 220 81

**94. PLEA TO JURISDICTION OF COURT.**—The accused before pleading to a charge may offer a special plea to the jurisdiction of the court, which would ordinarily refer to the fact—

- (a) That the court is improperly constituted R. 22
- (b) That he is not subject to military law. S. 158
- (c) That he is not amenable to that description of court. For instance, a warrant officer or camp follower could not be tried by regimental martial, or a field officer could not be tried by a court upon which a subaltern sat as a member. R. 23 S. 182 S. 184 S. 48

Evidence may be received for and against the plea, and the court decide in the usual manner by a majority of votes whether it shall be allowed or not.

If the court overrule the plea, the trial proceeds. If the plea be allowed, the court record their reasons for their decision, adjourn, and report to the convening officer, who either convenes another court or orders the release of the accused.

If the court are in doubt as to the validity of the plea, they can either (1) adjourn and refer to the convening officer, or (2) record a special decision with respect to the plea and proceed with the trial, leaving the dubious point to the confirming officer to decide. In the last case the confirming officer, if of opinion that the plea was valid, should not confirm the finding, and the trial would therefore be void.

**95. PLEA IN BAR OF TRIAL.**—The accused at the time of his general plea of ‘guilty’ or ‘not guilty’ may offer a plea in bar of trial on the ground that the offence has been previously dealt with by a civil court, court-martial, or his commanding officer, that it has been pardoned or condoned, or that more than three years (or such shorter period as may be fixed for a civil offence) have elapsed since it has been committed.

The court shall record the plea in bar as well as the general plea, and if in the opinion of the court the

facts stated are sufficient to support the plea, they shall receive any evidence offered and hear any address in reference to it.

If the court find the plea in bar is *proved*, they shall record their finding and notify it to the confirming officer, and shall either adjourn or proceed to the trial of the accused on any other charge that may be unaffected by the plea.

If the finding that the plea in bar is proved is confirmed, the accused will not be tried; if the finding is not confirmed, the court may be reassembled and proceed as if the plea had been found not proved.

If the court find that a plea in bar is *not proved*, they shall proceed with the trial, and the said finding shall be subject to confirmation like any other finding of the court.

Pleas in bar of trial if not now raised may be subsequently brought forward by the accused in his defence. 112

Evidence in support of pleas to jurisdiction and R. 34 in bar of trial may be given by the accused himself, and he may, notwithstanding he has given evidence, address the court in support of his views.

- 96. PLEADING TO CHARGE.**—Instead of pleading directly to the charge the accused may raise an objection to the charge on the ground that it does not disclose an offence under the Army Act, and is not in accordance with the rules of procedure. R. 32 M. v 51

The court either disallows the objection and proceeds to the trial, or allows the objection and adjourns and reports to the convening officer.

If no special plea or objection to the charge is offered, or if such a plea or objection has been overruled, the accused must either plead 'guilty' or 'not guilty.' If he refuses to plead, or does not do so intelligibly, a plea of 'not guilty' is entered for him. R. 35

## CHAPTER XI

### *PROCEDURE AT TRIAL*

97. PROCEEDINGS ON PLEA OF NOT GUILTY. 98. ADDRESSES—First—Second. 99. PROSECUTOR'S ADDRESS. 100. ADDRESS OF ACCUSED. 101. ORDER OF ADDRESSES—The Accused calls Witnesses—Does not call them—Joint Trials. 102. RECORDING ADDRESSES. 103. EMPLOYMENT OF COUNSEL—Statement by the Accused. 104. PROCEDURE IN SIMPLE CASES. 104A. INCIDENTS DURING TRIAL—Adjournments—Absence of President, Member, Accused, Prosecutor, and Judge-Advocate.

97. PROCEEDINGS ON PLEA OF NOT GUILTY.— When the accused pleads 'not guilty,' it is necessary for the prosecutor to prove, by the evidence of sworn witnesses, the substance of the charge which is made. It will not be sufficient for the prosecutor to allege certain facts and then to say, 'Let the accused be sworn and disprove my case if he can.'

The accused, on the other hand, has to explain R. 39 away or refute the charges which are supported by the witnesses of the prosecution by giving evidence R. 41 himself, or by calling witnesses to give evidence.

98. ADDRESSES.—In complicated cases the prosecutor and the accused may desire to make an opening address before the examination of their witnesses, and a second address after their witnesses are examined.

Addresses are usually in writing, and after they Ap. II.

have been read and handed to the president, are signed by him, and attached to the proceedings.

When a verbal address is made, the portions that the court think material should be taken down as far as possible in the words of the person delivering them, and any request of his as to the recording of a particular statement should be attended to.

It must be remembered that the value of an address depends wholly on the statements made in it being borne out by the evidence on oath of witnesses.

*First address.*—An opening address should point out clearly the view of the case taken by the person who makes it, and state in sequence the several facts, with their bearing on the case, which it is proposed to prove.

*Second address.*—A second address should sum up the evidence hitherto given, show how far it supports the statements made in the first address, and explain away the hostile evidence made in reply.

**99. PROSECUTOR'S ADDRESS.**—The opening address R. 39 of the prosecutor should be confined to an intelligible R. 60 explanation of the facts which he is about to prove. **69** He must not enter into any irrelevant matter, or make any statement he is not prepared to prove, or **M. v 57** use any violent language or strong expressions with a view of prejudicing the accused in the eyes of the court.

The second address of the prosecutor must be R. 40 strictly confined to summing up the evidence actually given. He may comment on the evidence given by the accused, but must not comment on the fact that the accused has not given evidence. He would be justified in pointing out that the accused R. 41 did not give his evidence until after he had heard the evidence of his own witnesses.

The prosecutor is in an official position, and is bound to act with scrupulous fairness towards the

accused. He should not keep back or gloss over the weak points of the prosecution, or take any unfair advantage of the accused or suppress any evidence in his favour.

It is the duty of the court to check the prosecutor if he shows any want of moderation or fairness to the person who is being tried.

**100. ADDRESS OF ACCUSED.**—The utmost liberty M. v 61 should be allowed to the accused in making his addresses. He can question the motives of the prosecutor and his witnesses, lay blame on other persons, R. 41 and make statements not relevant to the charge or supported by evidence. When statements are made R. 40 by the accused as to matters within his own knowledge they must be dealt with as evidence, though not on oath. But if the accused has given evidence himself, any statement which could have been made on oath can hardly have much weight with the court if not so made.

The court may caution the accused that in bringing charges wholly irrelevant to his defence he may render himself liable to be proceeded against under S. 27, or may point out that the line of defence he is taking is not likely to be of service to him. The court should also caution him that if he conducts his case so as to throw discredit on the witnesses for the prosecution he will, if he gives evidence himself, render himself liable to cross-examination as to character. Provided, however, he is not disrespectful to the court, and does not use insulting language to other persons, his defence should not be checked.

**101. ORDER OF ADDRESSES.**—The procedure as to addresses after the plea of ‘not guilty’ is recorded varies as follows :—

(1) *When the accused calls witnesses to the facts of the case, other than himself*— R. 39

- (a) The prosecutor may, if he desires, make an opening address.
- (b) The evidence for the prosecution is taken, the R. 84 witnesses being liable to cross-examination by the accused and re-examination by the prosecutor.
- (c) The accused may, if he desires, make an opening R. 41 address.
- (d) The accused may himself give evidence as a witness and may call his other witnesses, including witnesses as to character.

In special cases witnesses in reply may be called R. 86 by the prosecution at this stage to rebut statements on new matter introduced by the witnesses of the defence, or to prove previous convictions or entries in the conduct book in the event of the accused calling witnesses as to character.

- (e) The accused may make a second address. R. 41
- (f) The prosecutor is entitled to an address in reply.
- (g) The judge-advocate, if present and it is deemed R. 42 necessary, will sum up.
- (2) *When the accused does not call witnesses to the facts of the case, other than himself—* R. 39
- (a) The prosecutor may, if he desires, make an opening address.
- (b) The evidence for the prosecution is taken as before.
- (b\*) The accused, if he wishes to do so, will give evidence as a witness.
- (c) The prosecutor may make a second address for R. 40 the purpose of summing up his evidence, and commenting on the evidence of the accused (if any).
- (d) The accused may make an address in his defence.

- (e) Evidence for the defence as to character may be M. vi produced.
- (f) The prosecutor may, as a reply, produce proofs of former convictions and entries in the conduct book, but cannot again address the court.
- (g) The judge-advocate can sum up, if necessary. R. 61

*Joint trials.*—When two or more accused persons are 81 being tried together, the addresses and evidence of 131 all the accused persons should be taken before the 220 prosecutor replies, and the prosecutor will make one address only in reply as regards all the accused persons.

**102. RECORDING ADDRESSES.**—When an address of R. 95 the prosecutor or the accused is not in writing it need not be recorded to a greater extent than the court think necessary; but the court must in every case make a sufficient record of the defence of an accused person to enable the confirming officer to understand the reply he makes to the charges, and any particular matter in the addresses must be taken down at the request either of the prosecutor or of the accused.

**103. EMPLOYMENT OF COUNSEL.**—A counsel, to be R. 93 properly qualified, must be a barrister or solicitor in England or Ireland or an advocate or law agent in Scotland, or elsewhere any person in a corresponding position.

A properly qualified counsel cannot be objected to.

Counsel is allowed to appear on behalf of the prosecutor or the accused, and can be appointed to act as R. 88 70 judge-advocate, at all general and district courts- 72 martial held in the United Kingdom, and those held elsewhere if the Army Council or the convening officer thinks fit.

When counsel is engaged by one side, sufficient R. 89 notice must be given to the other to enable it also to

retain counsel, but such notice is not essential in the case of an officer acting as counsel for the accused.

*Their duties.*—A counsel has all the rights belonging to the person he represents, and can orally examine and cross-examine witnesses, make addresses, &c. ; but the person he appears for cannot then do any of the above things. A counsel for the accused will not be allowed to call him as a witness except on the application of the accused himself.

A counsel for the prosecution should always make R. 90 an opening address, and should state therein the substance of the charge and the general nature of the evidence he proposes to adduce.

Counsel, whether for the prosecution or the defence, R. 92 should adhere strictly to the rules which govern the procedure of military and civil courts. They must not state as a fact any matter which is not proved or intended to be proved, nor give opinions as to facts before the court, nor make assumptions as to matters not proven.

If a counsel puts to a witness a question which is 241 not *relevant*, except so far as it affects the credit of a witness by injuring his character, and the witness objects to answer, the court will decide whether the imputation intended to be conveyed by the question, would, if true, seriously affect their opinion as to the credibility of the witness or not. If they think it would, they should insist on an answer being given ; if they are of opinion it would not, they should disallow the question. If the question is put to the accused the court will have to consider whether, having regard to R. 80, he should be compelled to answer it.

*Officer as counsel.*—An officer subject to military law R. 87 who assists the accused during his trial before a 109 general or district court-martial has all the rights and duties of counsel, and may, at the request of the accused, assume such rights and duties.

*Statement by the accused.*—An accused person who is R. 94 defended by counsel or by an officer subject to mili-

tary law and who does not wish to give evidence on his own behalf, may, if he thinks fit, at the close of the case for the prosecution, make a statement either in writing or orally in explanation of the subject of the charges against him ; but such statement cannot be made on oath, nor is he liable to be examined thereon. The accused has the option of either giving evidence himself or making a statement. He need not do either, but cannot do both.

At the commencement of the defence the accused is asked if he wishes to make a statement in addition to the address of his counsel, and if he declares his intention of *not* making a statement the procedure depends, as before, as to whether witnesses to the facts of the case, other than himself, are called for the defence or not.

When an accused person decides that he will make a statement, the procedure will, as far as possible, be the same as if he had called witnesses to the facts of the case other than himself. The prosecutor will therefore be entitled to reply to the address of the counsel for the defence, and to call witnesses in reply to rebut any new matter introduced either in the statement of the accused or by the witnesses for the defence. The statement will usually be made before the witnesses for the defence are examined and before the address of the counsel for the defence.

**104. PROCEDURE IN SIMPLE CASES.**—In cases where the evidence is simple and the witnesses are few, addresses are not generally used, but the evidence of the witnesses of the prosecution and the defence is taken in the same order as if there were addresses. An accused person is entitled to give his evidence at any time whilst the evidence for the defence is being heard, but he should usually give his evidence before any other witnesses for the defence, as otherwise the value of his evidence may be considerably discounted.

In ordinary cases the *evidence* produced by the prosecution must be finished before the accused is called upon for his defence.

When, however, any new matter which the prosecutor could not reasonably have foreseen has been introduced by the accused in his defence, or where the accused has called witnesses as to character, and it is necessary to prove previous convictions or entries in the conduct book, the prosecutor may call witnesses to give rebutting evidence. 238 R. 86

As a rule, if the accused does not call witnesses to the facts of the case, other than himself, he has the *last word*; if he does call witnesses to the facts of the case, other than himself, the prosecutor has the last word.

After the summing up of the judge-advocate, or, if there is no summing up, when the prosecution and defence have completed their case, the court is cleared for the purpose of considering its finding.

**104A. INCIDENTS DURING TRIAL.**—On any question in dispute that arises during a trial the opinions of the members of the court are taken in succession, beginning with the junior in rank. R. 69 87 116 127

Subject to the provisions of the Army Act as to (1) the challenge, (2) the finding, and (3) the sentence of death, every question shall be determined by an absolute majority of the opinions of the members of the court.

In the case of an equality of votes on any sentence other than death or on any question, other than the finding, arising after the commencement of the trial (*i.e.*, the arraignment), the president shall have a second or casting vote.

*Adjournments.*—A trial should, as a rule, be continued from day to day, but a court may adjourn, if necessary, both from time to time as well as from place to place. If the date or place to which the adjournment is made is not fixed by the court, the S. 53 R. 63 R. 65

matter must be reported to the convening authority, who will arrange that an order is given for the subsequent assembly. When a court adjourns to another place the whole court must go, and not merely send a deputation, and the prosecutor and the accused must accompany them. Adjournments should not be made in order to afford the prosecutor or the accused time to procure evidence, unless it is clear that they had insufficient opportunity to do so. In cases of emergency which might arise on active service, the senior officer on the spot can adjourn or prolong the adjournment of a court.

The usual causes of adjournment are—that a court R. 22 is not satisfied as to its legal constitution, or as to the R. 23 qualification of the judge-advocate; that it has R. 14 doubts as to its jurisdiction, the amenability of the R. 33 accused to military law, or the explicitness or accu- R. 79 racy of the charge; that the accused has not been R. 76 properly warned; that witnesses have been called R. 65 without due notice to the defence; that the president, R. 67 judge-advocate, or the accused, or material witnesses are not present.

Adjournment may be requested by the accused to R. 41 prepare his defence, by the prosecutor to study his R. 65 reply, and by the judge-advocate to compile his summing-up.

Adjournment to a different place may sometimes be necessary when troops are on the move, or to view a place, or to take the evidence of a sick witness.

The court should also adjourn to obtain a decision or opinion on special pleas, charges, etc., from the convening or confirming officer, and generally when necessary for the ends of justice.

*Absence of president.*—If from death, illness, dis- R. 65 qualification, challenge, or other causes the president R. 66 is absent, the court cannot proceed, and the senior member must at once report the fact to the con-vening officer, and adjourn the court. If such S. 51 absence occurs before the trial has commenced, the S. 53

convening officer shall appoint another president, or R. 18 convene another court. After the commencement of S. 89 the trial no officer can be added to the court, but the convening officer may appoint the senior member of the court, if of sufficient rank, to be president, provided that the court is not thereby reduced below the legal minimum. Otherwise the court shall be dissolved and a new court convened.

*Absence of member.*—If before the commencement R. 18 of the trial (i.e., arraignment of the accused) the full number of officers detailed are from any cause not available to serve, the court should ordinarily adjourn for the purpose of fresh members being appointed. No officer can be added to a court-martial after the accused has been arraigned, but in all cases (whether before or after the arraignment of the accused) the court may, if necessary, proceed without the absentee, provided that the numbers of the court are not reduced below the legal minimum. If a court-martial *after the commencement of the trial* be S. 53 from any cause reduced below the legal minimum, it shall be dissolved. A member of a court who is R. 68 absent while any part of the evidence is taken can S. 80 take no further part in the trial. Where the inability of an officer (president or member) to attend is merely temporary, the court will adjourn until he returns.

*Absence of the accused.*—A trial cannot proceed in the S. 53 absence of the accused, and the court must adjourn R. 67 until he is present. In case of the death of the accused, or of such illness as renders it impossible to continue the trial within a reasonable time, the court will take evidence on oath as to such death or illness, and report to the convening authority, who will dissolve the court. Where a court is dissolved under the foregoing provision of illness, the accused on recovery may be tried again.

*Absence of prosecutor.*—The temporary absence of the prosecutor at any stage in the proceedings does

not affect their legality. But, when a prosecutor is absent, the court should adjourn until he returns or a new prosecutor is appointed by the convening authority.

*Absence of judge-advocate.*—A court-martial cannot proceed in the absence of the judge-advocate, and R. 102 must adjourn until he returns or a new judge-advocate is appointed by the proper authority.

## CHAPTER XII

### *PLEA OF GUILTY AND PARTLY GUILTY*

- 105. PROCEEDINGS ON PLEA OF GUILTY**—Exceptional Case—Warning to the Accused—Finding of Guilty. 106. STATEMENT BY THE ACCUSED. 107. TAKING EVIDENCE—As to Character—In mitigation. 108. PLEAS OF GUILTY AND NOT GUILTY.—Procedure.

**105. PROCEEDINGS ON PLEA OF GUILTY.**—A plea of M. v 54 ‘ guilty ’ is a conclusive admission by the accused of his guilt, and further evidence is not required for the purpose of proving the charge.

When an accused person pleads ‘ guilty,’ care must be taken to explain the charge to him and prevent him pleading in error. For instance, a man might be charged with ‘ wilfully injuring the property of a R. 35 comrade,’ and plead guilty to so doing, but state at R. 37 the same time that he did not inflict the injury intentionally. As he did not act ‘ wilfully,’ a plea of ‘ not guilty ’ should be entered.

Again, a man might plead guilty to desertion, but render the plea obviously an improper one by stating that he always intended to return.

When an accused person pleads guilty to two or more alternative charges, it must be pointed out to him that such a plea can only be recorded in respect of *one* of the charges. In the case of alternative charges the court may proceed with respect to all the charges as if the accused had not pleaded ‘ guilty ’ to any charge, or may accept his plea, and instead of trying him record a finding of ‘ not guilty ’ on each

alternative charge to which the accused has not pleaded 'guilty.'

*Exceptional case.*—Where alternative charges are preferred, one of which charges a less grave offence than the other, and the accused pleads guilty to the less grave offence, it is the duty of the court not to accept the plea of 'guilty,' but to try the whole case and determine judicially, upon sworn evidence, of which of the two charges the accused is guilty.

*Warning to the accused.*—The court, after satisfying R. 35 themselves that the accused fully understands the charge, should inform him of the general effect of the plea and of the difference in procedure which will be made by the plea of 'guilty,' and shall advise him to withdraw that plea if it appears from the summary of evidence that he ought to plead 'not guilty.' If the accused, though admitting the offence, wishes to show extenuating circumstances, he should plead 'not guilty,' in order to be able to produce evidence on his own behalf. A plea of 'not guilty' merely amounts to an expression of desire to have a formal trial.

It is advisable to point out to the accused that if he pleads 'guilty' the court will at once record a finding of guilty, and that they will only take evidence in order to enable them to fix the amount of punishment.

When great provocation for an offence is alleged, a court would be justified in going so far as to record a plea of 'not guilty,' even although the accused had pleaded guilty, in order to allow the existence of such provocation to be proved in the ordinary way. \*

*Finding of guilty.*—If the accused determines on R. 35 pleading 'guilty,' that plea shall be recorded as the finding of the court, and he is formally asked whether he has any statement to make in reference to the charge to which he has pleaded guilty.

**106. STATEMENT BY THE ACCUSED.**—If the accused R. 37 states any extenuating circumstances which should

in the opinion of the court be proved, or if it appears from the summary or abstract of evidence or otherwise that he does not clearly understand the effect of his plea, or if he for any reason, however mistaken, wishes to call witnesses other than to character, the court shall alter the record and enter a plea of 'not guilty.'

If at any time subsequently during the trial the court are of opinion that the accused has not admitted all the facts that constitute the offence charged, they may cancel their finding and proceed as upon a plea of 'not guilty.'

The statement made by the accused after the finding is unsupported by witnesses, and he cannot be examined thereon.

**107. TAKING EVIDENCE.**—Sufficient evidence is then R. 37 taken to enable the court to determine the sentence M. v 55 and allow the confirming officer to know the circumstances of the case. If there is a summary or abstract of evidence it will usually be enough to read it out and attach it to the proceedings. If there is no summary or abstract of evidence the court should take and record sufficient evidence in the usual manner. The accused may cross-examine the witnesses, but cannot produce witnesses in his defence, as the justice of the finding has been by him already admitted.

*In mitigation.*—Any statement by the accused in R. 37 mitigation of punishment can now be received, and the court can, if they think fit, allow him to give evidence himself or call witnesses to prove the statements he makes.

*As to character.*—The accused at this stage in the proceedings is allowed to give evidence himself or call witnesses as to character, who are examined in the ordinary way.

The court then take the usual sworn evidence of R. 46

an officer of the corps to which the accused belongs 121 as to his character and particulars of service.

The subsequent proceedings as to sentence, confirmation, etc., are the same as when a plea of 'not guilty' is being dealt with.

- 108. PLEA OF GUILTY AND NOT GUILTY.**—When an R. 37 accused person pleads guilty to some and not guilty to other charges (not alternative), care must be taken that he thoroughly understands the effect of his plea of guilty, and if there is any doubt about it a plea of not guilty should be entered.

*Procedure.*—After all reasonable precautions have been taken that the accused understands the effect of recording a plea of 'guilty,' the court proceeds with the trial on the charges to which he has pleaded 'not guilty.' After a finding has been arrived at in respect of the latter charges the court is reopened, and the charge to which the accused has pleaded guilty is again read to him, and the plea is recorded as the finding of the court, and the court shall receive any statement which the accused desires to make in reference to the charge. The subsequent procedure as to annexing the summary of evidence to the proceedings, etc., is detailed in the preceding paragraph.

## CHAPTER XIII

### *THE DEFENCE*

109. **THE DEFENCE**—Friend of the Accused. 110. R. 13  
**HELP FROM PRESIDENT.** 111. DUTY OF COURT.  
 112. PLEAS AVAILABLE. 113. REMARKS ON  
**PLEAS**—Insanity—Compulsion—Condonation—  
 Misfortune—Ignorance—Drunkenness.
- 109. THE DEFENCE.**—An accused person for whose trial R. 13  
 a court-martial has been ordered to assemble is R. 87  
 always entitled to make a defence, which he must  
 either carry out himself or permit his counsel, or an  
 officer subject to military law, who has the same  
 privileges as counsel (on a general and district court-  
 martial), to carry out for him. The accused cannot  
 address the court or examine witnesses if his counsel  
 does so. He has, however, the option of either giving 108  
 evidence himself, or making a written or oral state- R. 94  
 ment at the close of the prosecution as to the offence  
 with which he is charged, but such statement is not  
 made on oath, nor is the accused liable to be ques-  
 tioned in reference to it.

*Friend of the accused.*—An accused person who does R. 87  
 not employ counsel or an officer acting as such can  
 always have a friend, who may be either a legal  
 adviser or any other person, to assist him during the  
 trial, and a person so assisting him may advise him  
 on all points and suggest the questions to be put to  
 the witnesses. If the accused wishes to put in a  
 written statement or address in his defence, he may,  
 if he thinks it expedient, ask to have it read for him  
 by the president or a member of the court.

If the statement or address of the accused is not R. 95 written, sufficient record of it must be taken down to enable the confirming officer to judge of its purport.

**110. HELP FROM PRESIDENT.**—It is the duty of the R. 59 president to see that the accused does not suffer any disadvantage in consequence of ignorance or in- 66 capacity to examine witnesses, or to make his own 73 evidence intelligible. The president should therefore put any questions to witnesses (including the accused if he gives evidence) which may tend to elicit the truth, or may call witnesses whom he considers able to give material evidence to the court. Particular care should be taken to see that the evidence given by the witnesses for the prosecution is similar to that in the summary of evidence, and if there is a discrepancy the witnesses should be cross-examined by the president as to the difference.

**111. DUTY OF COURT.**—The court is bound to hear Sm. 587 whatever defence the accused may think fit to adopt. 100  
 ‘The utmost liberty consistent with the interests of M. v 61 parties not before the court, and with the respect due to the court itself, should at all times be allowed to the accused. He has an undoubted right to impeach by evidence the character of the witnesses brought against him, and is justified in contrasting and remarking on their testimony and on the motives by which they or the prosecutor may appear to have been influenced.’ A court-martial can hardly go wrong in allowing the greatest freedom of speech, but should caution the accused, if necessary, that intemperate speech and wild accusations do not further his cause, and may, if indulged in without S. 27 excuse, lead to his trial on a charge of making false accusations. The court should also caution him that if he so conducts his case as to throw discredit on the witnesses for the prosecution, he will, if he gives evidence himself, render himself liable to cross-examination as to character.

**112. PLEAS AVAILABLE.**—An accused person in his defence may plead that—

1. The charge is not proved.
2. The evidence of the prosecution is contradictory or unworthy of belief.
3. There was an absence of criminal intent.
4. He was insane when offence was committed.
5. He acted under compulsion.
6. He had been acquitted or convicted of the offence, or summarily punished for it. **52**
7. The offence had been condoned or pardoned. **95**
8. The trial is barred by limitation of time. **58**
9. The offence occurred through accident, ignorance of fact, physical incapacity, or necessity.

Pleas against the jurisdiction of the court, if not **94** before urged, may be brought forward, as well as any plea in mitigation of punishment, such as ignorance of the law or provocation.

A plea that the accused has had no previous intimation of the evidence produced against him by the prosecution has no value in point of law.

**113. REMARKS ON PLEAS.**—The value of the defence made by the accused depends mainly on the extent to which it is supported by the sworn evidence of witnesses. The accused is now entitled to give **115** evidence himself, and it will be hardly possible to attach any weight to statements by him not on oath which he might have made on oath.

When an unlawful act is committed criminal intent is presumed, and it is for the accused to prove the absence of such intent.

*Insanity.*—Insanity excuses from guilt. To make R. 57 a man responsible for crime there must be 'knowledge that an act is wrong, with power to abstain from doing it.'

*Compulsion.*—Compulsion is held to be a good O'D. 18 defence if it can be shown that the accused was M. vii compelled by actual force or acted under fear of death. **11**

*Condonation.*—When an offence is committed and O'D 27 not punished or forgiven, but advisedly overlooked, the person implicated being continued in his employment, it is held to be a good plea of condonation. If an offender is ordered to do duty either through some misapprehension or on account of the exigencies of K. 482 the service, or if he has been granted a conditional release and the conditions have not been complied with by him, the offence is not thereby condoned. A person cannot condone an offence unless he has the power to dispose of the case, and the act of condonation will nearly always proceed from a commanding officer.

*Accident.*—When mischief arises through an accident, chance or mistake, the main point to consider M.vii 29 is whether the original act was a lawful one or not. If the act be lawful the accused person has committed no crime; if the act be unlawful he is liable for the consequences of his act. For example, a soldier is at target practice under ordinary conditions, and a bullet ricochets off the range and kills a man. The soldier is not guilty of any crime. If, however, a man fires a rifle in the air in the middle of London he commits an unlawful act, and if the bullet killed anyone he would be guilty of manslaughter.

*Ignorance.*—Ignorance of the law, or mistaking the M. vii purport of a law or order is no defence. Ignorance 13 of fact is generally (but not always) admitted as an 251 excuse if the ignorance does not arise from wilfulness or negligence.

*Drunkenness.*—Drunkenness is no excuse for M. iii 31 crime. At the same time there are cases in which the 184 fact that a man was drunk may justify a court-martial in awarding a less punishment than it otherwise would.

*Incapacity through physical illness* might in some O'D. 18 cases be pleaded as an excuse. If a soldier disobeyed a command with which he was physically unable to

comply he could not in justice be found guilty of disobedience.

*Necessity* may be admitted as an excuse for crime M. vii when the accused can prove that the act was done 12 solely to prevent some serious evil from falling on himself or others whom it was his duty to protect.

## CHAPTER XIV

*THE FINDING*

- 114. CLOSING THE COURT.**—After the whole of the evidence for the prosecution and the defence has been heard (and, if necessary, summed up by the judge-advocate if there is one), the court is closed for the purpose of deliberating on the finding.
- 115. DELIBERATION—Recalling Witnesses—Adjournment.** 116. VOTING. 117. FINDING—Validity of Conviction—Military *versus* Civil Courts. 118. ‘NOT GUILTY’—Honourable Acquittal. 119. SPECIAL FINDINGS—On Alternative Charges—Of Insanity—Of cognate Offences—Remarks.

- 114. CLOSING COURT.**—After the whole of the evidence R. 43 for the prosecution and the defence has been heard (and, if necessary, summed up by the judge-advocate if there is one), the court is closed for the purpose of deliberating on the finding.

The judge-advocate (if any) remains present in R. 63 order that he may advise the court on legal points. When the evidence is voluminous he produces such notes or index to the evidence as may help the court in referring to the record ; but it is entirely beyond his province to express any opinion as to the case except on a point of legality.

- 115. DELIBERATION.**—The court should endeavour to be M. v 62 absolutely impartial, and should not allow themselves to be influenced by the consideration of any supposed intention of the convening officer in sending the case for trial, or by the fact that the accused has claimed to be tried by court-martial instead of submitting to the summary award of his commanding officer.

It must be remembered that according to one of R. 43

the fundamental maxims of English law, a man is presumed innocent till he is proved guilty, and that by the terms of the oath the members are bound to try the accused *according to the evidence or testimony of sworn witnesses.*

In complicated cases it will be advisable for the president to put clearly before the court a statement of the questions to be considered and the bearing of the evidence upon them. As each statement is put forward the members can discuss how far it has been supported by sworn evidence, and to this end must carefully separate mere statements made by the prosecutor or the accused from facts proved by their respective witnesses. Some weight may, however, be allowed to a statement of the accused even though not given on oath. For instance, if the statement would not have been admissible as evidence from the accused, or if it is corroborated incidentally or otherwise by evidence, or if the accused has been unable to procure a witness who might have given evidence on the point, considerable weight may be allowed to the statement. It will, however, be hardly possible to attach any weight to a statement not on oath which the accused might have made on oath and subjected to the test of cross-examination. The court must not find a man guilty unless they are satisfied that the prosecutor has *proved* his guilt. If the prosecutor neglects his duty, it is not for the court to make good his deficiencies. An accused person must not be found guilty of an offence other than that with which he is actually charged. For example: a soldier was tried under Sec. 40 for wilfully firing off his rifle in his barrack room. A finding of gross carelessness in firing off his rifle was held to be an acquittal. Again, in the case of embezzlement, a court found that the accused was deficient in his accounts, and it was held to be an acquittal.

*Recalling witnesses.*—The court can, if they wish, call R. 86 or recall any witness (including the accused if he 238

gives evidence) at any time before the finding, but it is undesirable that a witness should be called or recalled after the defence is closed. If a witness is recalled, the questions asked should be limited to one or two questions relating to the evidence previously given by that witness.

*Adjournment.*—If a court is in doubt as to whether R. 44 the facts proved constitute an offence under the Army Act, or, in the case of alternative charges, doubts which of the offences charged the facts proved do in law constitute, they may adjourn and refer to the confirming officer in order to obtain from him a legal opinion. If a judge-advocate is present there will seldom be a necessity for taking such a course.

- 116. VOTING.**—The opinion of each member of the court, R. 43 commencing with the junior in rank, will be taken separately on each charge in succession.

The president has no casting vote, and the opinion S. 53 of the court shall be determined by the absolute R. 69 majority of the opinions of its members, all of whom are bound to vote. If the votes are equally divided the accused must be found ‘not guilty.’

- 117. FINDING.**—The finding must be recorded as ‘guilty,’ R. 44 ‘not guilty,’ ‘not guilty, and honourably acquit him of the same,’ or a special finding may be made in 119 certain cases.

When alternative charges are used, an accused person can only be found guilty of one of them, and ‘not guilty’ must be recorded against the others.

*Validity of conviction.*—Whenever it appears that a R. 56 court-martial (1) had jurisdiction to try a person, (2) that the person was charged with an offence under the Army Act, (3) that the person was found guilty on legal evidence, the finding, if confirmed, shall be valid, notwithstanding any deviation from the Rules of Procedure, or technical defect, unless it appears that any injustice has been done to the offender.

*Military v. civil courts.*—The procedure in a military court differs from that followed in a civil court in the following points :—The finding need not be passed by a unanimous vote ; an accused person can at the same time be found guilty of several distinct offences ; the court may have to pass a special finding ; the court may have to revise its finding ; a finding of guilty has to be confirmed ; a finding of guilty is not disclosed until promulgated after confirmation.

- 118. ' NOT GUILTY.'**—If an accused person is found ' not guilty ' of *all* the charges in the charge-sheet which R. 45 is the subject of investigation, the president will date and sign the proceedings, the finding will be announced in open court, and the accused will be released in respect of those charges.

The releasing of the accused in respect of the charges on one charge-sheet does not prevent his being kept in custody and arraigned on another charge-sheet for another offence.

If the accused is found not guilty of some charges, R. 53 but guilty of others, whether they be in one or more charge-sheets, the finding of not guilty is not published until the proceedings are duly promulgated.

If the accused be acquitted on *any* charge, such 136 acquittal shall not require confirmation, nor is it sub- S. 54 ject to alteration or revision.

The particulars set forth in a charge may have R. 44 been proved in evidence, but the court must find the accused ' not guilty ' if they are of opinion that the facts proved do not disclose an offence under the Army Act. For example, the accused might be charged with conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline in doing certain acts. It may be clear the offence charged was committed, but if the court are of opinion that it was not one which is against ' good order and military discipline,' they should bring in a verdict of acquittal.

An officer, again, may be charged with behaving in a *scandalous* manner. If the court think that the offence proved is not *scandalous* in a military sense, they must acquit, as in this word lies the whole essence of the charge.

*Honourable acquittal*.—Honourable acquittal should only be used in cases in which the charge affects the honour of the accused person. If any part of the transaction which is tried is discreditable to the character of the accused the finding should not be used. The Duke of Wellington made some very strong remarks on the fact of an officer being ‘honourably acquitted’ of an affair which arose out of a quarrel at a brothel.

**119. SPECIAL FINDINGS.**—The most ordinary form of R. 44 special finding occurs when the substance of a charge is proved but there is some discrepancy as to the particulars. An offence might be charged as having been committed in Dublin, while the evidence showed that it took place at the Curragh, and the finding should correct the error of place. A man, again, might be found guilty of a charge with certain exceptions, or guilty only of a portion of a charge—*e.g.*, the accused might be charged with making away with two pairs of boots, while the evidence showed that one pair only is missing; or the accused might be charged with using certain insubordinate language, while the evidence showed that the words uttered do not correspond with those in the charge.

*On alternative charges*.—If the accused is tried on R. 44 alternative charges, and it appears to the court that the substance of the offence charged is proved, but that it is not clear on which charge the accused is legally guilty, it is advisable to refer to the confirming authority for an opinion. The court may, however, pass a special finding, stating the facts which they find to be proved, and leaving the matter open

to the confirming officer to decide under which charge the offence falls.

R. 55

*Of insanity.*—If an accused person was insane at the time he committed the offence, or is insane when arraigned, a special finding to that effect is made, and such finding must be transmitted for confirmation. If the finding is not confirmed the accused may be tried by the same or another court-martial for the offence with which he was originally charged.

*Of cognate offences.*—An accused charged with certain offences may be found guilty of other offences of a cognate character. An accused charged with stealing or embezzlement may be found guilty of either, or of fraudulently misapplying the property in question.

An accused charged with desertion, or attempting to desert, may be found guilty of either, or of absence without leave.

An accused charged with an offence involving a certain punishment can be found guilty of the *same offence* when committed under circumstances *involving a less degree of punishment*. For instance, a man charged with committing an offence on active service can be found guilty of committing it not on active service. And a man charged with ‘striking his superior officer in execution of his office’ may be found guilty of ‘striking his superior officer.’

*Remarks.*—An accused who is charged with a distinct offence under the Act cannot (with the above exceptions) be found guilty of any other offence. For instance, an officer charged with ‘behaving in a scandalous manner’ could not be found guilty of ‘conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline,’ nor could a soldier charged with ‘striking his superior officer’ be found guilty of an offer of violence.

Special findings refer as a rule to the *particulars* of a charge. The only description of special findings which affects the *statement of an offence* is (1) those

allowed by Section 56 of the Army Act, and (2) that alluded to in the latter part of Rule of Procedure 44 (F), with reference to alternative charges, in which the court is in doubt as to which offence the facts proved do in law constitute, and leave the legal point to be decided by the confirming officer. For example, a man is charged in the alternative with 'using insubordinate language to his superior officer,' and with 'conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline.' The court may find that the accused 'did . . . . , but doubt whether such facts constitute in law the offence stated in the first charge, or in the second charge, and therefore find him guilty of the offence in such one of those charges as the facts in law constitute.'

Ap. II.

## CHAPTER XV

*PROCEEDINGS BEFORE SENTENCE*

120. REOPENING COURT. 121. EVIDENCE TAKEN—  
Previous Convictions—Right of Accused. 122.  
CIVIL CONVICTIONS. 123. EVIDENCE TO CHAR-  
ACTER. 124. TRIAL OF OFFICERS AND N.C.  
OFFICERS. 125. CLOSING COURT.

- 120. REOPENING COURT.**—If the finding on a charge is R. 46 guilty, the court reopens and proceeds to take evidence as to character for its guidance in determining the sentence.

The person who gives the evidence should be the captain or other officer of the prisoner's company, etc.; but it may be given by the adjutant or the prosecutor or any other officer, but not by a member of the court.

- 121. EVIDENCE TAKEN.**—The evidence is produced in R. 46 the form of a written statement, which shows the number of troop or company entries against the accused, whether at the present time under sentence, the length of time he has been in confinement awaiting trial, his age, date of attestation, and service towards discharge and pension, and whether he is entitled to any gratuity or deferred pay, or possesses any decoration or reward which can be forfeited by 205 order of the court.

If the charge is for drunkenness, the entries for drunkenness must be stated separately.

*Previous convictions.*—A schedule of convictions by a Ap. II. civil court or court-martial is also produced (certified

by the signature of an officer), and the witness is asked to identify the accused as the person referred to in the above statement and schedule, and to testify that the evidence given has been correctly taken from the regimental books. The summary reduction of a non-commissioned officer by order from army headquarters does not count as a previous conviction.

When the previous convictions against the accused S. 164 are not recorded in the regimental books, a copy of S. 165 a civil conviction certified by the clerk of the court, or a certified copy of the proceedings or part of the proceedings of a court-martial, is admissible as evidence.

*Right of accused.*—The accused may request that R. 46 any statement made is compared by the court with that in the regimental books or a certified copy therefrom, and may cross-examine the witness producing it, and may address the court thereon.

**122. CIVIL CONVICTIONS.**—A previous conviction by a K. 553 civil court must of necessity be a conviction recorded 1916 against a man when serving *as a soldier*, whether the offence be committed in his present or in another corps, or while in a state of desertion or illegal absence. Any conviction against him as a civilian before his enlistment or any conviction after his enlistment for an offence committed prior to his attestation, is not admissible.

A sentence of imprisonment for seven days or under is not produced in evidence as a former conviction, but treated as an ordinary entry in the regimental conduct sheet.

**123. EVIDENCE TO CHARACTER.**—It is not competent R. 46 for the court to take verbal evidence of the accused being a *bad* character. The opinion of a man's character must be formed by the court from the schedule of convictions and entries in the company conduct book, and from the examination and cross-

examination of any witnesses to character (including the accused) who may have given evidence for the defence.

The court may, however, obtain an opinion as to a man's good character if he does not produce such evidence on his own behalf.

- 124. OFFICERS AND N.C. OFFICERS.**—On the trial of an officer it would be necessary to take evidence as to the date of his army and regimental rank, so as to be able to sentence him to any loss of seniority of S. 44 rank, and previous convictions, if any, should be produced.

Evidence should be taken as to any medal or decoration of which the court can order the forfeiture, P.W. 580 but cannot be taken with respect to any decoration R. 46 of which the court cannot order the forfeiture, as 198 for example, the Victoria Cross, or an order which is the personal gift of his Majesty, such as the Companionship of the Bath, or a medal or order that has been conferred by a foreign power. The fact of an officer possessing distinctions of any kind would probably be brought forward in his defence.

In the case of warrant officers and N.C. officers, evidence should be taken as to their previous regimental rank, and any of the usual details in the statement as to character which are applicable to the particular case.

- 125. CLOSING COURT.**—After all the evidence affecting the character and service of the accused is taken, the court has to be closed for the consideration of the sentence. Before this is done the prosecutor will call the attention of the Court to any exceptional punishment that may fall on the accused by reason of the finding of the court; and will produce a copy of any local order dealing with the unusual prevalence of the offence charged. The accused is then given an opportunity of addressing the Court before it is finally closed.

## CHAPTER XVI

*THE SENTENCE*

126. AMOUNT OF PUNISHMENT—Common Errors—Character of offence—Attendant Circumstances.  
127. VOTING ON SENTENCE—Nature of Punishment—Amount of Punishment. 128. COMMENCEMENT OF SENTENCE—Combined Sentence.  
129. WORDING. 130. ONE SENTENCE. 131. JOINT TRIALS. 132. RECOMMENDATION TO MERCY.  
133. REMARKS BY COURT. 134. FORWARDING PROCEEDINGS—Original Proceedings. 135. CUSTODY OF PROCEEDINGS.

**126. AMOUNT OF PUNISHMENT.**—In passing sentence **193**

courts-martial should be careful not to err on the side of too much severity. The proper amount of punishment is the least amount which meets the justice of the case and is necessary for the maintenance of discipline. Except with hardened offenders, a short sentence is as likely to be effective as a long one. Purely military offences are now to be punished by *detention*, and imprisonment will only be awarded for crimes of a disgraceful or fraudulent nature, or in cases where it is desirable that a soldier should be sentenced to discharge with ignominy.

For the first desertion within the first six months' service, and for the lesser class of offences usually dealt with by courts-martial, including all offences liable to be treated summarily by a commanding officer, the punishment should not exceed twenty-eight days' detention. An addition of from seven to twenty-eight days may appropriately be made in the

K. 583

case of each previous conviction or of any circumstances that aggravate the gravity of the offence.

A punishment not exceeding from 56 to 112 days' detention ought, as a rule, to suffice for the above offences when more than once repeated or when committed under circumstances that aggravate the gravity of the offence, or for striking a superior, grave disobedience, desertion, fraudulent enlistment, false evidence and accusations, and serious offences dealt with under Section 40. A sentence of detention of over 112 days is seldom given and should be reserved for the above offences when repeated or attended with circumstances which add to their gravity, and for the lesser class of offences when there are several previous convictions.

A sentence not exceeding 112 days' imprisonment should be awarded in cases of theft, fraud, and civil offences. From 113 days to six months' imprisonment would be given for repeated or grave cases of the above, or for an offence under S. 32. A sentence that amounts to or exceeds one year's imprisonment should be imposed only for a third or fourth case of the most serious military offences, for a second offence under Section 32, and for gross violence to superiors and disgraceful conduct under Section 18 (5).

Discharge with ignominy should be awarded in the case of any persistent repetition of serious military offences, and for offences of a disgraceful or fraudulent nature, and for offences under Section 32.

*Common errors.*—The court must not fall into the common error of awarding a heavy sentence for the reason that the convening officer has sent the case for trial to a superior court. If a general court-martial considers that an offence may be properly punished by a day's imprisonment, they should pass that sentence and no more. When the accused has elected to be tried in preference to submitting to the award of his commanding officer he should not be punished for exercising his legal rights, and when

the claim has been made in apparent good faith the accused should not be awarded a punishment exceeding that which could be given by his commanding officer.

*Character of offence.*—In the case of offences against K. 554 superiors, an offence having relation to the office held by the superior is of greater gravity than an offence against the individual apart from the duties 159 of his office, and (especially in minor cases of the above offences) the lower the rank of the superior, the less will usually be the gravity of the offence.

*Attendant circumstances.*—In addition to considering the nature and degree of the crime, the character of the accused, and the circumstances in extenuation or aggravation of the offence, the court will have to regard the consequences which by virtue of statute or regulation are involved by their finding or sentence, in addition to the punishment awarded. On account of the prevalence of a particular crime or a general lax state of discipline, it will in some cases be necessary to award a more severe punishment than would ordinarily be sufficient.

In awarding imprisonment the court should also keep in view the locality and climate in which the soldier under sentence has to undergo the punishment.

**127. VOTING ON SENTENCE.**—Every member must R. 69 vote on the sentence, even although he may have given a previous opinion in favour of acquittal. A court-martial acts in the two-fold capacity of judge and jury, and the court, having given their verdict as jurors, must act as judge in awarding a punishment adequate to the offence of which the accused has been declared guilty. Every question in connection with the sentence must be decided by an absolute majority, and in the case of equality of S. 53 opinions, the president has a casting vote.

Sentence of death cannot, however, be passed S. 48

without the concurrence of two-thirds of the officers composing the court, nor can it be passed by a field- S. 49 general court-martial unless all the members concur. R. 118

*Nature of punishment.*—When there is a difference R. 69 of opinion as to the punishment to be inflicted, the court decides first as to its nature and secondly as to the amount.

The president puts before the court the most lenient species of punishment applicable to the case that has been suggested, and if that is not carried, one more severe, and so on.

*Amount of punishment.*—When the nature of punishment is decided on it is necessary to vote for the amount. The opinion of the members is taken *seriatim*, beginning with the junior member, and then the president puts forward each opinion separately to be voted on, beginning with the most lenient.

It is always desirable that there should be some free discussion as to the sentence before the votes are taken, as otherwise, the junior officers, whose opinion is first asked, may, from lack of experience, give either a foolish or mischievous vote.

- 128. COMMENCEMENT OF SENTENCE.**—A sentence of S. 68 penal servitude or imprisonment or detention com- R. 50 mences from the date of the president's signature at the close of the proceedings. Care must be taken, therefore, that the proceedings are correctly dated and signed by the president, and also by the judge-advocate, if there is one. Any delay caused by revision or confirming the proceedings is all to the benefit of the prisoner, as his punishment is already fixed, and may be mitigated but cannot be increased. S. 54

Where a soldier sentenced to be reduced to the ranks was found not to have legally the grade of a non-commissioned officer, and the court on revision passed a sentence of imprisonment; the imprisonment was held to commence on the date of the original sentence of reduction. If a sentence of S. 57

penal servitude be commuted to imprisonment, or of imprisonment to detention, the commuted punishment is held to commence from the date of the original sentence.

*Combined sentence.*—When the accused who has been awarded punishment by the court is a person under sentence who is undergoing punishment as the result of a previous award, the new sentence runs concurrently with the old one, and allowance must be made for the portion of the old sentence which is unexpired. K. 584 S. 68

For example, an accused person has twenty-eight days of unexpired sentence to undergo. The court wish to inflict a further eight-four days' imprisonment. They will then sentence the accused to 112 days' imprisonment, as 28 days of the second sentence will run concurrently with the old sentence.

A court must not sentence a man to imprisonment O'D. or detention 'to commence at the expiration of' or 156 'in addition to' another sentence he is undergoing at the time of trial. The words are wholly inoperative, and it is easy to remember that *in all cases* the accused is liable only to the number of days' imprisonment or detention specified in the sentence of the court counting from the day on 134 which the proceedings are signed by the president. S. 68

When the accused is undergoing imprisonment or S. 68 detention at the date the sentence is awarded, it must be remembered that the total amount of imprisonment or detention resulting from the combined 202 sentences must not exceed two years.

**129. WORDING.**—The sentence must be in accordance S. 44 with the provisions of the Army Act, and should be Ap. II. worded as shown in the Appendix of the Rules of Procedure.

The sentence must fully describe the prisoner by number, rank, name and regiment.

If a non-commissioned officer is being tried and 213

has acting rank, such rank should be noticed in the charge-sheet, but no reference should be made to it S. 183 in the sentence, and any sentence of reduction from or to an acting rank is void.

All dates and numbers that occur in a sentence are to be written out in full, and in every case the sentence is to be marginally noted.

Terms of imprisonment or detention not amounting to six calendar months will be awarded in days. S. 44 Terms of imprisonment or detention of one year and two years will be awarded in years. Other terms of imprisonment or detention will be awarded in months, or if required, in months and days. A sentence of penal servitude or imprisonment should in the case of an officer be preceded by a sentence of cashiering, and it is desirable that a N.C. officer who is sentenced to penal servitude, imprisonment, or detention should first be reduced to the ranks.

**130. ONE SENTENCE.**—Courts-martial award only one R. 48 sentence in respect of all the offences of which an accused has been found guilty, and the sentence is deemed to be awarded in respect of any of the offences charged, and irrespective of whether the accused is tried on one or more charge-sheets. For instance, a man is charged with a second offence of fraudulent enlistment and also with drunkenness and theft. A sentence of penal servitude can be given, as it is justified by the first offence, although not applicable to the others if taken separately.

**131. JOINT TRIALS.**—In the case of several accused persons being tried together, each of the accused will be called upon separately to challenge, plead, and make his defence, and a finding must be arrived at separately for each person accused, and each person accused found guilty must be separately sentenced, and a separate record accordingly will be made in the proceedings.

- 132. RECOMMENDATION TO MERCY.**—When a court S. 52 recommends a person under sentence to mercy, the R. 49 reasons for taking such a course shall be given, and M. v 88 the recommendation is entered in the proceedings and promulgated with them. The number of opinions by which the recommendation was adopted or rejected may be mentioned.

It is the duty of a court-martial to award a sentence which is just and suitable to the circumstances of the case, and a recommendation to mercy will therefore be rarely necessary. Occasions for its use may, however, arise in the case of a peremptory punishment, such as the cashiering of an officer for scandalous conduct, where the court has no option as to sentence.

Again, a court may, in the case of a very serious offence, feel bound to inflict a severe punishment, but at the same time may think that, owing to the character of the person under sentence, or other exceptional circumstances, some mercy may, without injuring military discipline, be shown by the confirming officer, although not by themselves as judges of the case.

A court may also recommend a restoration of for- S. 79 feited service, giving its reasons for doing so. R. 49

- 133. REMARKS BY COURT.**—If a court wishes to make any remark as to the conduct of the prosecutor, witnesses, or any incidents connected with the trial, it should be embodied in a separate letter. The law M. viii as to libel is somewhat obscure, and there seems 76 some doubt as to the extent to which the opinions uttered by a court would be privileged from an action at law. It is advisable that any remarks made should deal only with questions of fact immediately connected with the procedure of the trial.

- 134. FORWARDING PROCEEDINGS.**—The proceedings R. 50 are completed by the president signing and dating

them. The judge-advocate, if present, also adds his signature, and they are forwarded without delay to the proper authority. When an accused has pleaded 'not guilty,' the summary of evidence may be destroyed, but it will usually be convenient to enclose it with the proceedings when sent to the confirming officer; it need not, however, be annexed to the proceedings unless there is a material variance between the statement of any witness in the summary and his evidence at the trial.

*Original proceedings.*—If the proceedings are recorded R. 97 in duplicate, one of them is considered the original and the other as a certified copy. A president who has written out and signed proceedings on an obsolete form may be required to re-write them on a proper form, and the copy thus made may be confirmed as the original proceedings.

As a rule, certified copies of original documents, K. 581 and not the originals themselves, are attached to the proceedings.

The proceedings of a general court-martial held at K. 592 home are transmitted to the judge-advocate general; if held abroad, to an officer who has authority to confirm general courts-martial, who, if unable from any cause to confirm the proceedings of that particular court-martial, will forward the same to the judge-advocate general.

The proceedings of district courts-martial are forwarded to the officer specified in the order convening the court, or, in default of such direction, to the confirming officer.

The proceedings of regimental courts-martial are forwarded by the president to the confirming officer.

- 135. CUSTODY OF PROCEEDINGS.**—The proceedings R. 96 shall be deemed to be in the custody of the judge-advocate (if any), or, if there is none, of the president, but may with proper precautions for their safety, be inspected by the members of the court, the

prosecutor, and prisoner respectively at all reasonable times before the court is closed to consider the finding.

After the trial is completed, the proceedings of R. 98 general and district courts-martial are kept in the judge-advocate general's office for seven and three years respectively, and those of the regimental K. 595 courts-martial are kept with the regiment until the 1925 next general inspection, and then forwarded to the R. 99 officer in charge of records and preserved for a total S. 165 period of three years. Copies of the proceedings may be obtained on payment by the person tried, within the time limited for their preservation.

## CHAPTER XVII

*CONFIRMATION*

136. CONFIRMATION. 137. CONFIRMING OFFICERS—Not a Member—On board ship—Trial of Marines. 138. POWER OF CONFIRMING OFFICER—Mitigation—Remission—Commutation—Restitution of Stolen Property. 139. REVISION—Only once—Absence of Members—Revising Finding—Revising Sentence. 140. IRREGULARITY IN PROCEEDINGS. 141. CONFIRMATION IN ERROR. 142. CONFIRMATION OF FINDING—Finding of Insanity. 143. NON-CONFIRMATION OF FINDING. 144. CONFIRMATION OF SENTENCE. 145. SPECIAL CONFIRMATIONS. 146. REMARKS OF CONFIRMING OFFICER. 147. REFUSAL OF CONFIRMATION. 148. OVERRULING OF CONFIRMING OFFICER. 149. PROMULGATION OF PROCEEDINGS—Forwarding of. 150. CORRECTION OF PROCEEDINGS. 151. LOSS OF PROCEEDINGS.

**136. CONFIRMATION.**—The procedure in military courts differs from that in civil in that the finding and sentence have to be confirmed by an authority independent of the court. The interposition of a confirming authority before a sentence can be executed enables a further review of the case to be made by an unprejudiced person, affords a check against any rash or illegal exercise of power by a court, and tends to cause a merciful application of justice.

The finding and sentence of a court-martial are S. 54 not valid unless they be duly confirmed.

When there is no confirmation there is no conviction **62** and the whole proceedings are null and no record M. v 97 of them is kept, and the prisoner can be tried again.

The only exception to this rule is the finding of **118** acquittal on a charge, which does not require con- S. 54 firmation.

The proceedings of a court-martial are not out of O'D. the hands of the confirming officer until they are 154 duly promulgated. Up to that time he may vary or amend in any way his minute of confirmation so long as in its final shape it is not inconsistent with law.

**137. CONFIRMING OFFICER.**—General courts-martial S. 54 at home are confirmed by the King, those abroad **79** by an officer deriving authority by a warrant either directly or indirectly from the King. He must not S. 122 be below the rank of field officer, except in rare cases abroad, where a captain may be authorised by a special warrant.

District courts-martial are confirmed by an officer S. 123 holding a warrant to convene general courts-martial, or an officer (not below the rank of captain) to whom he has delegated power by warrant to convene and confirm district courts-martial. General officers commanding-in-chief are to delegate the powers to K. 53 such officers as they think advisable, not below the rank of Colonel.

Regimental courts-martial are confirmed by the S. 54 convening officer, or by an officer who has authority to convene at the date of confirmation.

*Not a Member.*—A member of a court-martial can **271** not confirm its proceedings, and when a member S. 54 from his position becomes confirming officer the matter must be referred to a competent superior authority. In the event of the case in question arising in a colony, and there being no military

superior available, the Governor of the colony can himself confirm.

It is generally held that an officer acting as judge-advocate on a court-martial cannot confirm its proceedings.

*On board ship.*—When a court-martial is held on S. 188 board a ship not in commission, the proceedings can be confirmed provided there is a confirming authority on board who had the power to confirm at the port of embarkation. 57

When there is no such authority, confirmation takes place on disembarkation, in like manner as if the case had been tried at the place of landing. Troops en route for the seat of war are considered S. 189 to be on active service and can be treated accordingly.

When a regimental court-martial for the trial of M. 607 a non-commissioned officer is held on board one of H.M.'s ships, the commanding officer of the troops will confirm, but the sentence (of reduction, fines, and stoppages) cannot be carried out without the concurrence and order in writing of the captain of the ship.

*Trial of marines.*—In the case of the trial of a S. 179 marine, the Admiralty have power to confirm general courts-martial or authorise by warrant an officer to confirm either general or district courts-martial. If no warrant is issued by the Admiralty, the proceedings are confirmed by the usual authority who would deal with the case of a soldier of the regular forces.

- 138. POWER OF CONFIRMING OFFICER.**—It is the K. 588 province of a confirming officer to take care that the finding and sentence are legal, and to regulate the amount of punishment, and ensure that it is not greater than the interests of discipline and the merits of the particular case require. On receiving R. 51 the proceedings the confirming officer may confirm,

partially confirm, refuse to confirm, or send back either finding or sentence or both for revision.

When confirming the proceedings he may mitigate, S. 57 remit, commute, or suspend the execution of the sentence. A confirming authority cannot, however, S. 16 commute the sentence of cashiering passed on an officer for scandalous conduct.

He may also vary the sentence if it be informally expressed, or if it award a punishment in excess of the punishment authorised by law, and may in any case refer the finding and sentence either wholly or S. 54 partially to a superior authority. A wholly illegal sentence, such as penal servitude passed by a district court-martial, cannot be amended by a confirming officer. In any such case the confirming officer should treat the sentence as a nullity and direct the court to re-assemble and pass a valid sentence.

In some cases of special findings on alternative 119 charges he will have to decide upon which charge R. 55 the finding is to hold good.

*Mitigation* of a sentence means the awarding a less amount of the same species of punishment, and has the same effect as remitting a portion of the sentence. For instance, a sentence of forty-two days' detention may be mitigated to one of twenty-one days.

A confirming officer may mitigate the sentence of reduction to the ranks of a non-commissioned officer by placing him at a lower place in his rank, or reducing him to a lower grade.

*Remission* refers to the taking away of the whole or any portion of the punishment. Thus, of a sentence of eighty-four days' imprisonment with hard labour, the whole may be remitted, or twenty-one days of it, or the hard labour alone may be taken away.

*Commutation* is changing the description of punishment- 212  
by awarding a less punishment or punish- S. 44

ments. A punishment laid down by scale can always be commuted to one lower down in the scale to which the offender might have been sentenced. Thus death may be commuted to penal servitude, or penal servitude to imprisonment, or imprisonment to detention. But a confirming officer cannot commute a sentence to a punishment it would not have been within the power of the court to award.

A confirming officer, as such, cannot commute a punishment into general service, as the power is restricted to the authorities named in S. 101 and R.P. 128. Partial commutation of any one punishment by the substitution for a portion thereof of another punishment is illegal. Thus a sentence of eighty-four days' imprisonment could not be commuted to one of forty-two days' imprisonment and stoppages, nor could a sentence of one year's imprisonment be commuted to six months' imprisonment and discharge with ignominy.

*Restitution of stolen property.*—The authority confirming the finding and sentence of a court-martial may order stolen property or the proceeds of stolen property found on the offender to be delivered up to the lawful owner of the property. Where property stolen has been sold or pawned to an innocent third party, the said authorities may, after the restitution of the property to the lawful owner, order that out of any money found in the possession of the offender a sum not exceeding the amount of the proceeds of the sale or pawning shall be paid to the said person purchasing or taking in pawn. In order to recover his property from a pawnbroker an owner may have to take out a summons under the Pawnbrokers Act.

- 139. REVISION.**—When a confirming officer does not approve of either the finding or sentence, he can order the court to reassemble for the purpose of revision.

The order directing the reassembly should contain

the reasons why the confirming authority thinks a revision desirable, and should be embodied in a separate minute, which is read out to the court and attached to the proceedings.

When the finding or sentence is sent back for revision the court re-assembles in *closed court*, and considers the remarks of the confirming officer, but no further evidence can be taken. R. 52 S. 54

*Only once.*—Revision can only be ordered once, and in no case must a confirming officer recommend the increase of a sentence or the revisal of a finding of acquittal. S. 54

*Absence of members.*—If any member of the original court is unavoidably absent, the reason for his absence is stated and attached to the proceedings, R. 65 S. 53 and if the legal minimum of members is present the court can either proceed without him or adjourn, as they think proper. If the president is unable to attend, the court must adjourn and report the fact, and the convening officer must, if possible, appoint the senior member to be president. 67

If the legal minimum of officers or the judge-advocate (if there is one) is not present, or if the president is absent, and it is impracticable to make the senior member take his place, revision is impossible, and the proceedings are returned to the confirming officer, who must then deal as he thinks fit with the original finding and sentence. R. 65 R. 52

*Revising finding.*—When the finding is sent back for revision, and the court do not adhere to their former finding, they shall revoke the finding and sentence and record a new finding, and, if such new finding involves a sentence, pass sentence afresh. A finding of acquittal on any charge cannot be revised. A finding of insanity, in which case there is no sentence, is subject to revision. S. 54 R. 52

Where the finding is sent back for revision and the court adhere to the finding, they can neverthe-

less revise the sentence, but they have no power to increase the sentence originally awarded.

A finding cannot be altered so as to entail a more severe sentence—*e.g.*, on a charge of desertion the court originally find the prisoner guilty of ‘absence without leave’; this cannot be revised into a finding of desertion.

*Revising sentence.*—When the sentence is sent back S. 54 for revision, the court cannot revise the finding, nor R. 52 *increase* the sentence originally awarded.

If a court passes a sentence which is partly legal R. 51 and partly illegal it cannot, on revision, alter the R. 56 illegal portion into any other punishment, as it would thereby be increasing the original sentence. It should simply pass again the legal portion of its former sentence and omit the illegal part.

Where a sentence in excess of that authorised by law has been passed, a court on revision can bring it into conformity with the law by reducing it, and where revision is impracticable, the confirming officers may remedy the defect.

If a court passes a *wholly illegal* sentence it is null and cannot be amended by the confirming officer, and the court on revision have the same power of sentence as if they had passed no sentence at all; *e.g.*, a court sentence a lance-corporal to be reduced to the ranks; the confirming officer re-assembles the court in order that they may pass a legal sentence.

The proceedings after revision are dated and R. 52 signed in the same manner as the original proceedings, and sent back to the confirming officer.

- 140. IRREGULARITY IN PROCEEDINGS.**—When it K. 591 appears to a confirming officer that the proceedings of a court-martial are illegal, or involve substantial injustice to the accused, and he has not confirmed the finding and sentence, he will withhold his confirmation; if he has confirmed the finding and

sentence he will direct the record of the conviction to be removed and the accused to be relieved from all consequences of his trial. If an irregularity has occurred which is simply of a technical character, and which does not affect the merits of the case, or lead to injustice being done to the accused, the proceedings may be confirmed, and the sentence should be mitigated if the confirming officer thinks that a reduction is necessary on account of the informality in question.

Informality in the finding and sentence will, as a rule, be amended by sending back the proceedings for revision. A confirming officer may, however, vary the wording of an informal sentence, and, if the sentence be in excess of that authorised by law, may reduce it to a legal amount and then confirm it. He cannot, however, amend a sentence that is wholly illegal, as, for instance, a sentence of discharge with ignominy given by a regimental court-martial, or a sentence of reduction of a lance-corporal to the ranks, but must send it back for revision.

The proceedings of a court-martial are not out of the hands of the confirming officer until they are duly promulgated. Up to that time he may vary or amend in any way his minute of confirmation, so long as in its final shape it is not inconsistent with law.

Irregularities discovered after promulgation can only be dealt with by the authorities specified in S. 57 of the Army Act.

**141. CONFIRMATION IN ERROR.**—When a person not duly authorised confirms in error, his act, as well as the promulgation thereof, is a nullity, and it is still open to the proper authority to subsequently confirm.

When a punishment is inflicted on a person in pursuance of the action of a confirming officer who is not duly authorised, that officer, having acted ille-

gally, is liable to an action by civil law. Civil M. viii. courts do not, however, interfere with errors in military procedure as long as they are committed in M. viii. good faith, but sometimes remedy mistakes as to jurisdiction. In 1844 the Governor of Sindh confirmed, without proper authority, a sentence of penal servitude on a soldier of the Bombay army. On appeal to the civil law the soldier was released, on the ground that the Governor had no power to confirm

- 142. CONFIRMATION OF FINDING ONLY.**—When the K. 591 finding of a court-martial is confirmed, but not the sentence, or when both are confirmed, and the sentence is wholly remitted, the record of conviction remains against the person accused, and carries with it any penalties consequent on conviction. 206

*Finding of insanity.*—If a court makes a special S. 130 finding as to the insanity of the accused, it is forwarded for confirmation. If the finding is confirmed R. 57 the accused is detained as an insane person during H.M.'s pleasure. If the finding is not confirmed he may be tried again.

- 143. NON-CONFIRMATION OF FINDING.**—A court-martial through a misapprehension of the law may word their finding of guilty in such a manner that it virtually amounts to acquittal. In such a case the confirming officer should refuse to confirm, and direct the acquittal to be carried out. For instance, a soldier is charged with 'making a false accusation against another, knowing such accusation to be false.' The court finds that the accused is guilty of the charge, with the exception that the accusation was not false—which is virtually an acquittal.

When the confirming officer is of opinion that the R. 34 court has improperly overruled a special plea to its general jurisdiction, or a plea in bar of trial, which

has been raised by the accused, he should not confirm the finding, and the proceedings are annulled, **95** **62** and the accused (not having been legally tried at all) can be tried again.

**144. CONFIRMATION OF SENTENCE.**—The sentence **R. 54** must be justified by the finding. If the finding is only partially confirmed, the sentence may have to be diminished so as to make the punishment legally consequent on the finding that is confirmed.

A court-martial may in respect of alternative **R. 44** charges make a special finding, and leave it to the **R. 55** confirming officer to decide on what charge that finding legally holds good.

The confirming officer must decide on the legal point, and should remit or commute the sentence, if it is necessary, so as to be in accordance with the finding so declared.

An officer who confirms a sentence is responsible **M. v** for seeing that the sentence is carried into effect, **100** and will, in all cases, give the necessary directions for the execution of the sentence.

**145. SPECIAL CONFIRMATIONS.**—In some cases confirmation is reserved or requires the approval of civil authorities. **79**

The sentence on a commissioned officer of death, penal servitude, cashiering, or dismissal, must be confirmed, if in India by the Commander-in-Chief, if elsewhere by the King.

Every sentence of death (not on active service) **S. 54** and *in respect of a civil offence* any sentence of penal **S. 41** servitude which is passed in a colony must be approved by its Governor.

Sentences of death for treason and murder (not on active service) and penal servitude, *in respect of civil offences*, which are passed in India must receive the approval of the Governor-General.

All sentences of death on active service and, *in respect of military offences*, sentences of death and penal servitude in India, and of penal servitude in the colonies, do not require to be sanctioned by the civil authorities.

- 146. REMARKS OF CONFIRMING OFFICER.**—In the act of confirmation it is best to adhere strictly to the authorised forms, and any material deviation from them is likely to lead to a miscarriage of justice—*e.g.*, ‘I confirm the finding and mitigate the sentence to . . .’ was held to be invalid as regards the sentence.

Any remarks of the confirming authority should be separate from and form no part of the proceedings. They will be communicated in a separate minute to the members of the court or, in exceptional cases, be made known in the orders of the command. In no case will comment be made upon a finding of ‘not guilty’ or upon the inadequacy of a sentence. K. 589

When, however, an officer who would have confirmed the finding had the trial resulted in a conviction wishes to comment on a finding of acquittal, his remarks are not to be entered on the proceedings, but are to be embodied in a letter to the Army Council, who will give such orders as may be necessary. K. 590

- 147. REFUSAL OF CONFIRMATION.**—A refusal to confirm should be signified in writing on the proceedings, and signed by the confirming authority. Confirmation ought only to be withheld when the provisions as to the assembly and constitution of the court have been contravened, or when the charge or finding is bad in law, or when a plea to jurisdiction or in bar of trial has been improperly overruled by a court, or when the accused has been unduly restricted in his defence, or has been convicted on evidence legally inadmissible, or when a deviation from the Rules of Procedure has caused an injustice to be M. v 97 S. 54 S. 47 S. 48 S. 50 S. 51 S. 52 R. 34 R. 36 R. 56

done to him. A refusal to confirm annuls the whole proceedings, and consequently there is no conviction and the accused can be tried again; but it is **M. v 5 62** obvious that this course should only exceptionally be adopted.

- 148. OVERRULING OF CONFIRMING OFFICER.— S. 57**  
 After promulgation when confirmation is complete **R. 126 212** the sentence may be mitigated, remitted, or commuted by the King or the following authorities, who **M. v 98** must hold a position not inferior to that of the authority confirming the sentence :—

The Army Council, the Commander-in-Chief in India, general officers in command both at home and abroad, and any officer specially authorised.

If after confirmation and promulgation some of the **R. 54** charges or findings are found to be invalid, the above authorities should take the invalidity into consideration and mitigate the sentence accordingly.

If again, the sentence is found to be invalid, the above authorities may pass a valid sentence, which shall have the same effect as if passed by the court-martial. The punishment awarded must not be greater than that mentioned in the invalid sentence.

The fact of an officer having confirmed a court-martial does not prevent him exercising the power of remission, etc., after the proceedings are promulgated, provided that he is one of the authorities empowered to do so. The commanding officer who confirms a regimental court-martial is not one of the authorities specified, and therefore has no power after promulgation to alter the sentence. **S. 57**

It should be noted that if a *material illegality* is found **K. 591 62** after the proceedings are confirmed and promulgated, the person under sentence is relieved from all the consequences of his trial by order of the superior authority who has power to deal with a sentence after it has been confirmed.

If the proceedings can be legally sustained, but K. 591 an irregularity has occurred, the conviction may be allowed to take effect, but the above authorities will consider what reduction of the punishment (if any) is due to the person under sentence.

When a special finding on an alternative charge R. 55 has been confirmed, a superior authority may overrule that finding, and cause a finding in accordance with the other alternative to be recorded. The sentence should be remitted or commuted to suit such new finding.

Generally speaking, a permanent authority can do *after* promulgation everything that a confirming officer can do previous to it.

When an accused has been *legally* tried and convicted, and it is afterwards found out that there has been a miscarriage of justice and that he is innocent, application should be made to headquarters for a 'King's pardon.'

- 149. PROMULGATION OF PROCEEDINGS.**—After confirmation the proceedings are forwarded to the commanding officer of the accused for promulgation. The charge, finding, sentence, confirmation, and any recommendation to mercy are usually read out on parade in the presence of the soldier under sentence. R. 53 K. 593 S. 53

The result of the court-martial is notified in the regimental orders, and occasionally in general or district orders, at the discretion of the superior authority.

*Forwarding of.*—The date of promulgation should K. 594 be recorded on the proceedings, which are then forwarded with a covering letter.

The proceedings of general and district courts- K. 596 martial are to be forwarded as soon as possible after promulgation to the judge-advocate general. Delay in transmission exceeding one month must be explained by a special report. The proceedings of regi-

mental courts are kept with the regiment until after K. 1925 the next general inspection, when they are forwarded to the officer in charge of records.

- 150. CORRECTION OF PROCEEDINGS.**—The record of 140 the proceedings may be corrected in minor points after confirmation or promulgation, provided that no injustice is thereby done to the person under sentence. The authority competent to deal with the proceedings at the period when the error is discovered may order the president of the court to sign a certificate rectifying the mistake, and the certificate is attached to the *original* proceedings. In a recent court-martial the words, ‘the president and 134 members were duly sworn’ were omitted, and the error was rectified by a certificate from the president declaring the omission. In another case it was found on promulgation that the president had omitted to sign the proceedings. The confirming officer thereupon directed the president to attach a certificate to the proceedings to the effect that the sentence had been duly passed by the court on the named date, but that he had accidentally forgotten to sign the record.

- 151. LOSS OF PROCEEDINGS.**—If the original proceedings of a court-martial or any part thereof are lost R. 100 they may be replaced by a certified copy. If there is no such copy, and sufficient evidence of the charge, finding, sentence, and transactions of the court can be procured, that evidence may, *with the assent of the accused*, be accepted instead of the original proceedings or part thereof lost. The finding and sentence in the above case, if requiring confirmation, may be confirmed.

If the proceedings have not been confirmed and there is no such copy or evidence, or the accused refuses his consent to the above course, he may be

tried again, and the finding and sentence of the previous court shall be null.

Where the proceedings of a court-martial have been confirmed and are lost before promulgation, R. 100 does not apply. The finding and sentence are valid after confirmation, but no action can be taken to carry out the sentence except after proof by sufficient evidence of the loss of the proceedings, of the charge, plea, finding, sentence and confirmation.

## CHAPTER XVIII

*CRIMES AND PUNISHMENTS*

## 152. OFFENCES PUNISHABLE BY MILITARY AND CIVIL COURTS AND OFFENCES OF RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES.

152. OFFENCES PUNISHABLE BY MILITARY COURTS.—The various offences against military law, 153 together with the maximum punishment that can be awarded for them, are described in detail in the Army Act, the Reserve Forces Acts of 1882-1907, and the Territorial and Reserve Forces Act of 1907, to which reference should be made in any particular case. In the following tables the crimes and their punishments are systematically grouped.

*Offences committed by Persons subject to Military Law which can be punished by Military Courts.*

Section	Headings	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
4	<b>Offences in relation to the enemy</b>	1. Shamefully abandoning post 2. Shamefully casting away arms 3. <i>Treacherously</i> holding correspondence with the enemy 4. Assisting or harbouring enemy 5. Voluntarily aiding enemy when a prisoner of war 6. Knowingly committing an act which imperils the success of the forces 7. Cowardly misbehaviour before enemy 8. Leaving commanding officer to plunder 9. Leaving guard or post without orders 10. Forcing or striking sentinel 11. Impeding or refusing to assist provost-marshal 12. Using violence to bringer of supplies, or person, or property of inhabitants 13. Breaking into a place for plunder 14. <i>Intentionally</i> causing false alarms 15. <i>Treachery</i> about parole, watchword, or countersign 16. Irregularly appropriating supplies contrary to orders 17. Sleeps on, is drunk on, or leaves his post when a sentry (a) Mutiny and sedition (b) Desertion (on active service) (c) Violence to a superior officer <i>in execution of his office</i> (d) <i>Willful</i> defiance in disobeying the lawful command given <i>personally by superior officer in execution of his office</i>	Death
6	Offences committed <i>on active service</i> which are punishable more severely on active service than at other times <i>Otherwise cashiering or imprisonment</i>		
7	<b>Special offences</b>		
12			
8			
9			

5	Offences in relation to the enemy	1.	Leaving ranks without orders	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		2.	Wilfully damaging property	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		3.	Being taken prisoner through carelessness or disobedience, and not rejoining when able	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		4.	<i>Without due authority</i> holding correspondence with enemy	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		5.	Spreading reports calculated to alarm	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		6.	Using words creating alarm or despondency	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
8	Offences committed <i>on active service</i> which are punishable more severely than on active service than otherwise	1.	Violence, or threatening language to a superior officer	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
9	<i>Otherwise cashiering or imprisonment.</i>	2.	Disobedience to lawful command of a superior officer	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
12	Offences punishable more severely for a second offence than a first.	1.	Desertion (not on active service).	Second offence	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
13	<i>First offence—imprisonment.</i>	2.	Fraudulent enlistment.	Second offence	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
17	Offences in regard to public property	Embezzlement	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
20	Offences in regard to a prisoner punishable more severely when wilfully committed	1.	<i>Wilfully</i> releasing a prisoner	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		2.	<i>Wilfully</i> allowing a prisoner to escape	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.	.
		<i>Otherwise—imprisonment.</i>																		

*Offences committed by Persons subject to Military Law which can be punished by Military Courts—continued.*

Section	Headings	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
12 13	Offences punishable more severely for a second offence than a first. <i>Second offence—penal servitude.</i>	1. Desertion (not on active service). First offence 2. Fraudulent enlistment. First offence . . .	<b>Imprisonment</b>
14	Offence in relation to desertion	Assistance to or connivance at desertion . . .	
18	Disgraceful conduct (of soldier)	1. Malingering, maiming, or aggravating disease 2. Theft or embezzlement . . . 3. Fraudulent or unnatural crimes . . .	
20	Offence in relation to a prisoner not wilfully committed <i>If wilfully committed—penal servitude.</i>	1. Without proper authority releasing a prisoner 2. Without reasonable excuse allowing a prisoner to escape . . .	

## Imprisonment.

23	Offences in relation to supplies	Dealing corruptly in regard to sutlers or supplies to the forces . . . . .
24	Offences as to equipment of soldier	1. Losing by neglect or making away with any article of his kit, or equipment, or making away with his medal . . . . . 2. Ill-treating his horse . . . . . 3. Wilfully injuring public, regimental, or soldiers' property . . . . .
25	Offences in relation to false documents, declarations, and statements	1. Knowingly making false returns or reports . . . . . 2. Fraudulently making away with documents . . . . . 3. Making false declarations officially . . . . . 4. Making false accusations . . . . . 5. Making false statements when complaining . . . . . 6. False confession of desertion (soldier) . . . . . 7. False statements to get furlough (soldier) . . . . .
27	Perjury	Perjury . . . . .
29	Offences as to enlistment	1. Illegal enlistment of a man discharged from the service in disgrace . . . . .
32		2. Wilful false answers to attestation questions before justice . . . . . 3. Improper enlisting of a man . . . . . 4. Violating regulations as to enlistment and attestation . . .
33		
34		

*Offences committed by Persons subject to Military Law which can be punished by Military Courts—continued.*

Section	Headings	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
6	Offences committed <i>not on active service</i> which are punishable more severely on active service than at other times	Crimes : vide s. 6 and <i>ante</i> , p. 138 . . . . .	Cashiering in case of an officer; imprisonment in case of a soldier
6 (2)	On active service— <i>death</i> Offences in respect of } military service {	1. Negligently causing false alarms . . . . . 2. Without good excuse making known watchword . . . . .	
8	Offences committed <i>not on active service</i> which are punishable more severely on active service than at other times		
9	On active service— <i>penal servitude</i> .	1. Violence or threatening language to a superior officer . . . . . 2. Disobedience to lawful command of a superior officer . . . . .	
10	Minor cases of insubordination and disobedience . . . . .	1. Being concerned in a fray, resists arrest . . . . . 2. Resisting against lawful custody . . . . . 3. Breaking out of barracks (soldier) . . . . .	
11		4. Neglect of orders . . . . .	
15	Absence from duty without leave . . . . .	1. Absence from parade or without leave . . . . . 2. Absence beyond garrison limits or from school (soldier) . . . . .	
16	Scandalous conduct of an officer	Behaving in a scandalous manner unbefitting the character of an officer and gentleman (peremptory punishment) . . . . .	

## **Cashiering in case of an officer; imprisonment in case of a soldier**

19	Drunkenness on or off duty		
21	1. Unnecessarily detaining a prisoner		
22	2. Not reporting committal of prisoner within twenty-four hours		
	3. When on guard not reporting as to prisoner within twenty-four hours		
	4. Escaping or attempting to escape from lawful custody		
26	Offences in relation to a prisoner		
27	Offences in regard to returns		
28	Offences in relation to courts-martial		
30	Offences in regard to billeting and impressment of carriages		
31	Disloyalty.		
35	Injurious disclosures		
36	Ill-treating soldiers (by officers and non-commissioned officers)		
37	Duelling and suicide		
38	Refusing to aid civil power		
39	Conduct to the prejudice of military discipline		
40	Using traitorous or disloyal words Injuriously disclosing movements, etc., of H.M.'s Forces 1. Ill-treating soldiers 2. Unlawfully detaining pay 1. Fighting & duel 2. Attempt at suicide Refusing or neglecting to aid the civil power Any act to the prejudice of good order and military discipline not specially mentioned in this Act		

**NOTE.**—A court-martial can try all civil offences committed by persons under military law, subject to certain restrictions as to treason, treason-felony, murder, manslaughter, and rape. (§. 41.)

*Summary of Offences exceptionally treated by Military Courts.*

Section	Summary of Offences	How dealt with—Maximum Punishment
6	Certain acts of serious misbehaviour	(a) On active service—death (b) Otherwise cashiering or imprisonment
8	Violence to superior officer <i>in execution of his office</i> Violence, or using threatening or insubordinate language to superior officer {	Death (a) On active service—penal servitude (b) Otherwise cashiering or imprisonment
9	Wilful defiance in disobeying the lawful command given personally by superior officer <i>in execution of his office</i> Disobedience to lawful command given by superior officer	Death (a) On active service—penal servitude (b) Otherwise cashiering or imprisonment
12	Desertion . . . . .	(a) On active service—death (b) Otherwise—1st offence, imprisonment 2nd offence, penal servitude
13	Fraudulent enlistment . . . . .	1st offence, imprisonment <b>2nd offence, penal servitude</b>

16	Scandalous conduct of an officer . . . . .	Peremptory punishment; must be cashiered
19	Drunkenness . . . . .	Must be summarily dealt with unless the offence was committed on active service or on duty, or after being warned for duty, or unless the offender was found unfit for duty, or unless the soldier has been guilty of drunkenness on not less than four occasions in the preceding twelve months
44		
46		
9		
20	Releasing or otherwise permitting the escape of a prisoner . . . . .	If wilfully done—penal servitude If otherwise—imprisonment.
28	Contempt of Court . . . . .	(1) The offender to be tried by <i>another</i> court, and suffer cashiering or imprisonment  (2) If the offender creates a disturbance in court, the court may order him to be imprisoned, or in case of a soldier to undergo detention, for 21 days

L

*Offences against the Army Act which can be punished by Civil Courts.*

Section	Headings	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
98	Offences against enlistment	1. Unlawful recruiting or improper interference with recruiting . . . 2. False answer on attestation . . .	Fine of 20 <i>l.</i>
99		1. Improperly billeting, neglecting or refusing to properly billet, or receiving bribes in the matter (Of constable.)	Three months' imprisonment
109	Offences in relation to billeting	2. Refusing to billet, or giving bribes to escape billeting (Of innkeeper.)	Fine of 10 <i>l.</i>
110		3. Offences against billeting mentioned in S. 30 (Of officer or soldier)	Fine of 50 <i>l.</i>
111		4. Refusing to pay for billets, or damaging innkeeper's property (By officer or soldier.)	Must pay the amount with costs if brought before civil court
119		5. Fraudulent claim of billets . . .	Three months' imprisonment or 5 <i>l.</i> fine
121			

116	Offences in relation to impressment of carriage	1. Improperly impressing carriage, refusing to properly impress carriage, or receiving bribes in the matter (Of constable.)	Fine of 20 <i>l.</i>
117		2. Refusing to furnish carriage, or giving bribes to escape impressment (Of innkeeper.)	Fine of 10 <i>l.</i>
118		3. Offences against impressment mentioned in S. 31 (Of officer or soldier.)	Fine of 50 <i>l.</i>
119		4. Refusing to pay for carriage or damage in respect of carriage impressed (Of officer or soldier.)	Must pay the amount with costs if brought before a civil court
121		5. Fraudulent claims as to impressment	Three months' imprisonment or 5 <i>l.</i> fine
126, 129	Offences in relation to proceedings of court-martial	Contempt of court or perjury before a court-martial (By civilian.)	Such punishment as the civil court dealing with the offence can award for it, if committed against itself

*Offences against the Army Act which can be punished by Civil Courts—continued.*

Section	Headings	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
142	Offences as to personation	Falsely personating a man belonging to the forces	Three months' imprisonment or 25 <i>l.</i> fine
143	Offences as to tolls	Improperly demanding and receiving tolls from soldiers	Fine of 5 <i>l.</i>
152	Offences in relation to desertion	1. False confession of being a deserter . 2. Inducing or assisting a soldier to desert .	Three months' imprisonment
153			Six months' imprisonment
155	Miscellaneous offences .	1.* Trafficking in commissions, promotions, or exchanges 2. Buying from or assisting a soldier to make away with his equipment or kit	Six months' imprisonment or 100 <i>l.</i> fine
156			1st offence, 20 <i>l.</i> fine and treble value of property ; 2nd offence, fine as before or six months' imprisonment

\* An officer who is convicted of this offence by a court-martial can be dismissed the service.

*Offences of Persons who may or may not be subject to Military Law.*

Headings.	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
R.F.A. 16. S.R. 165. Offences of men of the army and special reserve	1. Desertion, in failing to appear when called out on permanent service or in aid of civil power 2. Absence without leave, in failing to appear when called out on permanent service or in aid of civil power, or when called out for training	By military courts the punishment authorised by A.A. for like offence
R.F.A. 6, S.R. 174. Offences of men of the army reserve and special reserve as far as applicable	1. Failing to comply on two consecutive occasions with orders referring to payment of reserves 2. Failing to attend at any place when duly ordered 3. Failing to comply with orders issued by virtue of R.F. Act 4. Being insubordinate to a military official who is carrying out provisions of R.F. Act 5. Fraudulently obtaining pay or allowances	By civil court, fine of 25/- or imprisonment for its non-payment
S.R. 161. Offences of men of the special reserve	False answer on attestation . . . .	By court-martial, S. 33 By Civil Court, S. 99

*Offences of Persons who may or may not be subject to Military Law.*

Heading	Crimes	Maximum Punishment
Offences of men of the Territorial Force (when not embodied), T.F.A. 10, 11, 20, 21, 22, 24. T.R. 247, 249	<p>1. Enlistment of men discharged with ignominy from army or navy</p> <p>2. Enlistment contrary to regulations</p> <p>3. Fails to appear on embodiment</p> <p>4. Fails to appear at training or drills</p> <p>5. Injury to or loss of public property</p>	<p>By military courts punishment as authorized</p> <p>By civil courts fine of 20<i>l.</i> Imprisonment up to 3 months</p> <p>By civil courts. Fine of 5<i>l.</i></p> <p>By civil courts. Fine of 5<i>l.</i> and make good loss or damage</p>

## CHAPTER XIX

*CRIMES*

- 153. CLASSIFICATION OF OFFENCES.** 154. FORCING A  
**SAFEGUARD.** 155. MUTINY—Limitation as to  
 Trial. 156. INSUBORDINATION. 157. SEDITION.  
 158. VIOLENCE TO A SUPERIOR—Superior Officer  
 —Offer of Violence—Execution of his Office.  
 159. INSUBORDINATE LANGUAGE. 160. DISOBEDI-  
 ING LAWFUL COMMAND—Lawful Command—  
 Military Command—Neglect of Orders.

**153. CLASSIFICATION OF OFFENCES.**—In the first M. iii 2 part of the Army Act, which treats of discipline, are S. 155 enumerated the offences for which officers or soldiers in their military capacity are punishable by a court-martial (with the solitary exception of the offence of trafficking in commissions). The principle of classification adopted consists in grouping together offences of a similar character and ranging the various groups as between themselves in a manner intended to impress the soldier with their relative military importance. For example, the Act begins with the punishment of ‘offences in respect of military service’ (ss. 4-6), on the ground that misbehaviour in the field is the greatest crime that a soldier can commit. This is followed by ‘mutiny and insubordination’ (ss. 7-11), by way of showing that after misbehaviour in the field mutiny and insubordination rank next in order amongst a soldier’s crimes.

The above headings are followed by—

Desertion, fraudulent enlistment, and absence without leave (ss. 12-15);

Disgraceful conduct (ss. 16-18) ;  
 Drunkenness (s. 19) ;  
 Offences in relation to prisoners (ss. 20-22) ;  
 Offences in relation to property (ss. 23, 24) ;  
 Offences in relation to false documents and statements (ss. 25-27) ;  
 Offences in relation to courts-martial (ss. 28, 29) ;  
 Offences in relation to billeting (s. 30) ;  
 Offences in relation to impressment of carriages (s. 31) ;  
 Offences in relation to enlistment (ss. 32-34) ;  
 Miscellaneous military offences (ss. 35-40) ;  
 Offences punishable by ordinary law (s. 41).

The majority of the offences require no comment beyond that afforded by the notes appended at the end of each section in the Army Act. Some of the crimes, however, require a more detailed notice, which is here given.

**154. FORCING A SAFEGUARD.**—Up to 1829 the forcing S. 6 of a safeguard was punishable by death without alternative. The term safeguard has been differently interpreted, but for the purposes of this section it may be defined to be a party of soldiers who are detached by a commanding officer for the purpose of protecting property or persons from the operations of his own troops. Any soldier of such party when in the performance of this duty is a part of the safeguard, and to force him is as criminal as to force the whole party.

In 1811 the Duke of Wellington placed safeguards Ho. 184 in certain villages in Spain to prevent his troops from pillaging them. In the invasion of France in 1870 the Prussians protected the chateaux of some of their friends in a similar way.

**155. MUTINY** implies collective insubordination, and the S. 7 resisting *military* authority in combination or M. iii 4 simultaneously. A man by himself cannot mutiny,

as it is essentially a joint act. At the same time a man might be charged singly with failing to inform his commanding officer of a mutiny, or with endeavouring to seduce a soldier from his allegiance.

*Limitation clause.*—A man can always be tried for S. 158 mutiny irrespective of the amount of time which has S. 161 elapsed since the commission of the offence, or of 58 the fact that he has ceased to be subject to military law.

**156. INSUBORDINATION** is the mutinous act of an S. 8 individual. Several soldiers may commit at the same S. 9 time and place acts which would come under the S. 10 general head of insubordination. This, however, M. iii 5 does not constitute mutiny, which manifests itself when there is a *combined intention* to rise against military authority.

**157. SEDITION** is similar to mutiny, but is directed S. 7 against the civil authorities. It consists in acts of M. iii 6 a treasonable or riotous nature against constituted authority or the public peace.

Sedition covers a far greater variety of offences than mutiny, and includes all tumultuous or disorderly demonstrations which have a mutinous tendency.

In the case of mutiny there must be proof of direct resistance or disobedience, or intention to carry out acts which would lead to them. Sedition would refer to acts which do not go quite so far.

‘For instance, each one of a number of men going O'D.36 in a body to a superior in a menacing manner in order to induce him to release a prisoner or mitigate his punishment, joins in sedition.’

**158. VIOLENCE TO A SUPERIOR.**—Using or offering S. 8 violence to a superior officer in execution of his office is so grave an offence that the meaning of the words constituting it require exact definition.

The term *superior officer* means not only a superior S. 190

in rank but also a senior in the same grade where that seniority gives power of command according to the usages of the service; but one private soldier can never be the 'superior officer' of another. It should be clearly proved in the evidence that the accused knew that the person who was the subject of the offence was his superior officer. A naval officer on shore or a prison warder or a nurse at a military hospital or a military policeman as such is not a *superior officer* within the meaning of the Act.

'Offer of violence' implies any threatening act or gesture amounting to an attempt to use violence.

It must be clear that the attempt, if not prevented, would in reasonable probability lead to an act of violence.

If a man makes threats or uses threatening gestures, and there is no apparent probability of his being able to carry out his intention, he could not be charged with an offer of violence, but would be tried for using either threatening or insubordinate language, or under S. 40.

A soldier shaking his fist at an officer on parade out of an upper-storey barrack-room window would not be guilty of an offer of violence, as there is no probability of his being able to carry out his threat. If, however, a soldier aimed at an officer with a loaded rifle, or if he made an unsuccessful attempt to strike him in an orderly-room, he might be charged with offering violence. A soldier who stands in the corner of a barrack-room with a fixed bayonet and dares anyone to approach him does not 'offer violence,' while a soldier who strikes the charger on which an officer is seated, or who spits at an officer, does come under this clause.

When a soldier commits an insulting or insubordinate act, which does not amount to an 'offer of violence,' such as throwing down his arms on parade, or throwing away his cap when coming out of an orderly-room, he would usually be charged with the

'threatening' or 'insubordinate' language he used, and the acts or gestures would be circumstances that might lead the court to inflict a more severe punishment. If, however, no language was used that could be charged under this section, the offender would be tried on a charge of conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline.

S. 40

*'Execution of office.'*—The fact that the insertion of this expression in a charge of offering violence to a superior renders the offender liable to punishment of death makes it expedient that the charge should not be so worded if there is any doubt as to the superior being in execution of his office.

It is somewhat difficult to define the exact term. It is clear that an officer in uniform, or a non-commissioned officer in or about a military quarter, is in execution of his office when he exercises his ordinary duties of military command and supervision.

An officer in plain clothes may or may not be in execution of his office. When doing duty with troops he would be so considered, provided the offender had reasonable cause to know that he was an officer, and this would have to be proved in evidence.

'Two soldiers met an officer in plain clothes in the O'D. 39 dark and assaulted him; he then ordered them to desist, stating that he was Lieut. — of the Royal Artillery (the soldiers belonging to a line regiment in the same garrison), whereupon they said they did not care, and continued to assault him.' The officer was held to be in the execution of his office, as the soldiers had reasonable cause to believe that he was an officer from his statement.

An officer on leave in plain clothes would only in very exceptional cases be deemed in execution of his office.

Again, the mere fact of being in uniform does not of itself imply that a superior is always on duty. For instance, in the social intercourse of officers or non-commissioned officers among themselves, cases

might arise where violence was offered to a superior, and the circumstances would not justify the conclusion that he was in a position to exercise military command, and therefore in execution of his office. Similarly, a non-commissioned officer would clearly not be in execution of his office when committing an illegal act, such as a felony.

It is not necessary, however, that a superior should be actively discharging military duty. Thus, a corporal who was asleep in a barrack-room of which he had charge, and was then assaulted, was held to be protected by this section.

- 159. THREATENING OR INSUBORDINATE LANGUAGE.**—The language used must be in substance and effect recounted in the charge. In order to charge a man under this section it must be clear that the words were deliberately used with the intention to be insubordinate or insulting or disrespectful, and that the accused knew that his words could not help being heard. Due regard must be paid to the actual circumstances of the case, and a hasty or angry expression or language used by a man when drunk which he would not probably employ if sober, or expressions made use of by a man when on his defence before a military tribunal, should not be thus charged, but if necessary punished under S. 40.

In all insubordinate acts it should be kept in mind that the greater the distance in position between the offender and the superior, the greater will be the offence. Language which, used by a soldier to a non-commissioned officer, would be merely disrespectful, might, if used to an officer, be treated as insubordinate.

Insubordinate language must be addressed to the superior officer, or in such a manner that he is intended to hear it. Insubordinate or threatening language about a superior, if used in the hearing of

another superior, constitutes the offence of 'using insubordinate language,' but if used not within the hearing of a superior officer would be charged under S. 40.

**160. DISOBEYING LAWFUL COMMAND.**—In order to S. 9 convict under the most serious of the charges in this M. iii 8 section it must be clearly proved that the superior was in execution of his office, that the command was *lawful*, that it was delivered *personally*, and that it was disobeyed under circumstances showing a wilful defiance of authority.

The refusal to obey must be deliberate and obstinate, so as to show in the clearest manner an intention to defy and resist superior authority.

The disobedience must be immediate and proximate to the command, and actual non-compliance must be proved.

A soldier who is awarded seven days' C.B. and absents himself from defaulter's drill, or a sergeant who is ordered to attend dinners daily and who fails to do so on two occasions, could not be charged under this section.

A soldier detailed for a future guard says, 'I will not do it.' He will be confined, and may be charged with insubordinate language, but the mere fact of his confinement prevents compliance with the order received, and he cannot, therefore, be tried for disobeying it.

Non-compliance with an order arising from misapprehension, stupidity, forgetfulness, or negligence is not an offence under this section, nor could a soldier be charged under it for an offence such as declining to sign his accounts on the ground that they are incorrect.

To establish the offence of disobedience under the second clause of the section it is not requisite to prove that the command was given personally by a superior. It is sufficient to show that it was given

by the deputy or agent of the superior, whom the accused might reasonably suppose to have been authorised to notify to him the command of his superior. But it must be a specific command to an individual, and must be given as being the command of a superior.

*'Lawful command.'*—There has always been a good deal of discussion as to what is meant by a lawful command. It appears, however, undisputed—M. iii  
10

(1) That the command is to be given by a superior who has the right to do so.

(2) That it refers to some matter connected with military duty, and is, in fact, a military command.

(3) That it is not contrary to civil law, and is justified by military law and custom.

'So long as the orders of a superior are not obviously and decidedly in opposition to the well-known and established customs of the army and laws of the land, or if in opposition to such laws do not tend to an irreparable result, so long must the orders of a superior meet prompt, immediate, and unhesitating obedience.'

No excuse as to religious scruples is any justification for refusing to obey an order. An officer cannot refuse to pay respect to what he considers a heathen ceremonial by not presenting arms, if he is given an order to do so. Nor can an officer refuse to attend with his men any form of worship at which he may be ordered to be present in the usual course of military duty.

*Military command.*—It is difficult to lay down exactly the limits of a strictly military command. It should be quite clear, in order to charge a man under this section, that the refusal to obey the command in some way interferes with a public military duty.

O'Dowd gives a good illustration of a lawful military command for the purposes of this section. An officer going on military duty orders a soldier to fetch his horse. Disobedience to such an order wouldO'D. 50

render the soldier liable under this section. If, however, the officer wanted his horse to go out hunting or to take an ordinary ride for pleasure, refusal to bring it could not be treated as disobedience to a lawful command, although, of course, the soldier might be otherwise punished.

*Neglect of orders.*—A soldier may be charged with S. 11 neglecting to obey a standing order having a continuous operation, whether garrison or regimental, or of a like nature. Disobedience of a King's Regulation or of an Army Order would be punished under S. 40, unless such regulation or order were formally republished as a garrison or regimental order.

Ignorance of a published order is not a valid defence, but the existence of the order and the fact of the neglect must be proved.

## CHAPTER XX

*CRIMES—(continued)*

161. DESERTION—Judged by Time—Judged by Distance—Limitation as to Trial. 162. RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES. 163. DESERTION ON FURLough. 164. ATTEMPTING TO DESERT—Persuading to Desert—Assisting to Desert. 165. PROOF OF DESERTION. 166. VARIATION IN FINDING. 167. PENALTIES, ON CONVICTION—Forfeitures—Restoration. 168. REPEATED OFFENCES. 169. PROCEDURE AS TO DESERTERS. 170. FRAUDULENT ENLISTMENT—Limitation Clause. 171. ATTEMPTING FRAUDULENT ENLISTMENT. 172. REPEATED OFFENCES. 173. DISPENSATION WITH TRIAL. 174. FALSE ANSWERS ON ATTESTATION. 175. ILLEGAL ENLISTMENT. 176. ABSENCE WITHOUT LEAVE—On Furlough—Breaking out of Barracks. 177. OVER TWENTY-ONE DAYS—Not Desertion. 178. UNDER TWENTY-ONE DAYS. 179. RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES. 180. TRIAL BY CIVIL COURT.

161. DESERTION is constituted when a man absents himself with the *intention* either of not returning to service, or escaping some important service, such as active service, embarkation for foreign service, or service in aid of the civil power. S. 12 M. iii 13

A soldier detailed in regimental orders as a 'waiting man' for a draft for service abroad is held to be 'under orders for service abroad.'

The crime of desertion was recognised by the civil law and punished as a felony before the passing of

the first Mutiny Act brought a more speedy method of dealing with it into action.

The various Mutiny Acts authorised a maximum penalty of death for the offence, and finally the Army Act provided a punishment in accordance with the conditions under which the desertion was committed—*i.e.*, death, penal servitude, or imprisonment, according to circumstances.

*Judged by time.*—The length of *time* a man is absent has nothing to do with desertion. Cases have occurred where a lengthy absence was obviously involuntary, and the offender had no intention of leaving the service. For instance, a corporal of an English battalion serving in Canada was virtually kidnapped and made to serve as a soldier during the war in the United States between North and South, and was unable to get back to his regiment until after the close of the war. Again, a gunner at a seaport town in England drifted out to sea in a small boat and was carried to Australia in an outward-bound ship, and was unable to get back for many months.

On the other hand, a soldier who was only a few hours absent might be arrested in plain clothes on board a ship bound for a foreign country, and it would be quite clear that he intended to desert.

*Judged by distance.*—Neither can desertion be invariably judged by *distance*. ‘A soldier may absent himself and depart to a very considerable distance, but the intention to return may be clear, whereas he may scarcely quit the camp or barrack-yard and the evidence of desertion may be complete—as if a soldier were detected in passing through the outposts clandestinely, or crossing a frontier, or being taken in disguise with letters on his person indicating his intention. The perpetration of any heinous crime, coupled with absence without leave and the forcible capture of the offender—though the absence be of short duration and the distance inconsiderable

Sm. 183

—may lead to the belief that the prisoner had no intention of returning.

A man who hides himself at the time his regiment is embarking for foreign service can be tried for desertion, as his intention to evade this important service is apparent.

*Limitation clause.*—A man can always be tried for S. 158 desertion *on active service*, irrespective of the amount S. 161 of time that has elapsed between the commission of 58 the offence and the arraignment of the accused. For desertion *not on active service* a man can similarly be always tried, except when he has served, after committing the offence, three years continuously in an exemplary manner before the charge is made against K. 489 him, in which case he is not liable to trial. If a trial for desertion takes place more than three years O'D. 57 after the commission of the offence no other charge (such as making away with kit) must be preferred at the same time.

A civil court cannot try a man for deserting from the regular forces, as the Acts referring to this offence 81 were repealed in 1863. In certain cases, however, 152 men of the reserve forces can be tried and punished for desertion by a civil court.

**162. DESERTION—RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES.**—Men of the reserve and territorial forces S. 178 are of course liable for trial for desertion when their corps or they themselves individually are subject to military law.

A man in the territorial force, whether otherwise T.F.A. subject to military law or not, can be tried for desertion 20 for failing to appear when the territorial force is R.F.A. assembled for embodiment, and a man belonging 15 to the reserve forces is similarly liable to trial when he is called out either on permanent service or in aid of the civil power.

In both cases they can if necessary be tried by a 81

court of summary jurisdiction and on conviction are **152** punishable by fine and imprisonment.

- 163. DESERTION ON FURLough.**—Discussion has more than once taken place as to the possibility of a man deserting *while on furlough*. It is clear that a man K. 1302 is still under orders when on furlough, and is liable to be called on to rejoin at any moment. Hence, if he commits any act, such as disguising himself or going where orders cannot reach him, he shows an intention of quitting the service ; and if a man acts so that orders cannot reach him, he illegally absents himself from the place in which he ought to be.

The common example given is that of a soldier on furlough who is found on board an outward-bound ship with a passenger ticket. According to the above reasoning he might be tried for desertion, but it will always be in the power of the court, if they hold an opposite view, to convict the accused of the similar offence of attempting to desert.

S. 56

- 164. ATTEMPTING TO DESERT** is punishable to the S. 12 same extent as desertion. To prove desertion it is necessary to show the absence without leave and the intention not to return. Cases of attempting to desert will arise when the intention is evident but the absence does not occur. For instance, a man might be caught in plain clothes attempting to slip past a sentry, or a case might occur in which a man had made arrangements to disguise himself and had taken a ticket by rail or otherwise to a distant place.

The evidence should be sufficient to prove that the carrying out of the *attempt* with which the prisoner is charged would lead to his desertion.

*Persuading to desert.*—Persuading or endeavouring S. 12 to persuade a man to desert is punishable to the same extent as desertion.

*Assisting to desert.*—Assisting or conniving at S. 14 desertion is a lesser offence. In this case a man must

actually have deserted or attempted to desert in consequence of the assistance or connivance made.

Any person persuading or assisting a soldier or a S. 153 man of the reserve forces or territorial force to desert R.F.A. is liable to imprisonment by a civil court for a term 17 not exceeding six months' hard labour. T.F.A. 20

- 165. PROOF OF DESERTION.**—The mere fact of a man surrendering himself is not a proof that he did not intend to desert. It is quite possible that he might have surrendered from changing his mind or from finding it impossible to effect his escape.

When a soldier pleads guilty to a charge of desertion M. iii 13 it should be made clear to him that the question of intention is the substance of the charge, and that the court are considering something more than his illegal absence. Soldiers commonly think that the crime alleged against them is mainly in reference to their illegal absence, and thus plead to a wrong issue. 177

The ordinary proofs which would satisfy a court as to a man's intention to desert are his having expressed an opinion to that effect, being found without proper cause in plain clothes or in disguise, having taken a passage to a distant place, absconding after commission of a serious crime, being found in hiding, having made arrangements for sale of his property, etc.

Fraudulent enlistment is an offence allied to desertion not on active service, and is similarly punished. M. iii 21 Formerly, a man who absented himself from his corps and fraudulently enlisted in another regiment could be tried for desertion, but now it is held that in any ordinary case he cannot, as his intention to serve is evident. If, however, a man fraudulently enlists in a regiment for the purpose of avoiding a particular service (*e.g.* service abroad) he is liable to be charged with desertion.

- 166. VARIATION IN FINDING.**—A prisoner charged S. 56 with desertion may be convicted of attempting to

desert or of absence without leave, and a prisoner **119** charged with attempting to desert may be found guilty of desertion or absence without leave. When there is any doubt as to the intention not to return being sufficiently proved, the accused should be given the benefit of it and found guilty of the minor charge. It has been ruled that a soldier acquitted by court-martial of desertion could not afterwards be punished by his C.O. for the absence without leave on which the charge was based.

**167. PENALTIES ON CONVICTION.**—A soldier convicted of desertion (or fraudulent enlistment), or who confesses those offences and (being liable to trial) **S. 79** has his trial dispensed with, necessarily forfeits, counting from the date of conviction or order dispensing with trial :—

*Forfeitures.*—All prior service towards discharge **P.W.** and advantages accruing therefrom as to good- **1023** conduct badges, deferred pay and proficiency pay, to- **1042** gether with any medals or decorations (other than **1158** the Victoria Cross), and the annuities and gratuities **902** belonging to them. He also forfeits his pay of every **1064** kind (and consequently service towards pension) during the time of his absence on desertion and while he is under detention awaiting trial or dis-  
posal. (Where trial is dispensed with, any forfeiture **K. 543** (other than prior service towards discharge) may be remitted by the order dispensing with trial). He **206** is further liable to general service anywhere, either **S. 83** wholly or partly in commutation of other punish-  
ment, as the competent military authority may direct.

*Restoration.*—Forfeited service will be restored upon **S. 79** promotion to the rank of sergeant, upon completion **K. 273** of three years clear of entry in the regimental de-  
faulter book, on the recommendation of a court- **P.W.** martial, or on account of good and faithful service. **1020** Medals, decorations, annuities, and gratuities may **1042**

also be restored under regulations approved by the Army Council.

- 168. REPEATED OFFENCES.**—For the offence of desertion (not on active service) the higher punishment of penal servitude can be awarded for the second and any subsequent offence. It is lawful to charge an accused with any number of offences of desertion at the same time, and a conviction on more than one charge makes him liable to the higher penalty, but each charge should be on a separate charge sheet and the trials kept distinct. S. 12

When a man is tried on a charge of desertion, the similar offence of fraudulent enlistment may be reckoned as a previous offence, and render the offender liable to the higher penalty. 222

For the purposes of trial, a man charged with either of the above offences is deemed to belong to any one or more of the corps to which he has been transferred or appointed.

- 169. PROCEDURE AS TO DESERTERS.**—On reasonable suspicion a constable, or in his absence any officer, soldier, or other person, may apprehend a person whom he suspects to be a deserter from the army, R.F.A. or a deserter or absentee without leave from the reserve forces or a deserter from the territorial force, T.F.A. and forthwith bring him before a court of summary jurisdiction. When the court is satisfied that the man is a deserter or absentee the court duly commits him as such, and, forwarding a descriptive return, hands him over as soon as practicable to the military authorities. S. 154 16 20 167

With a view to the detection and apprehension of deserters and absentees without leave a descriptive report, giving the fullest information possible as to the absentee, is to be sent to the editor of the 'Police Gazette.' Where there is good ground for supposing an absentee to have deserted, the report

should be forwarded as soon as possible, but in no case should it be delayed beyond five days. Duplicate reports should be sent to any regimental districts or local police that may assist in apprehension.

A soldier on leave who is not heard of five days K. 1300 after the expiration of his furlough is reported as a deserter, as well as a man absent more than twenty-one days. In other cases the soldier is reported as an absentee, unless there is reason to believe that he is a deserter.

If a deserter surrenders himself to any portion K. 517 of his own corps, and evidence as to identification is immediately available, he may at once be taken into military custody. If a man in the uniform of the regular forces surrenders himself at a military station as a deserter or absentee he may, pending investigation, be detained in military custody, a written confession being obtained from him. In all other cases a person *not serving*, who is apprehended on suspicion of being a deserter (in consequence of his own confession or otherwise), is to be brought before a court of summary jurisdiction, and duly committed before being taken into military custody.

If a deserter is discovered *while serving*, the offence K. 521 is at once reported to the prescribed authorities, and the offender is kept in military custody till orders are received as to whether he is to be tried or his trial is to be dispensed with.

If a soldier makes a confession, when serving, of S. 73 desertion or any offence against enlistment, and the K. 479 evidence is not at once forthcoming, he may be ordered to continue at his duty till it arrives, instead of being taken into custody. A record of the confession signed by him is kept, and the matter reported to the proper authority.

*False confession.*—Any person who falsely represents S. 152 himself to be a deserter from the army, or a deserter S.R.168 or absentee from the reserve forces, shall, on summary R.F.A.

conviction by a civil court, be sentenced to imprisonment not exceeding three months.

If a soldier subject to military law makes a false statement to his commanding officer as to desertion or fraudulent enlistment, or as to serving in or discharge from any of H.M. forces, he can be tried for the offence by court-martial.

- 170. FRAUDULENT ENLISTMENT.**—A soldier in the regular forces, a man in the territorial force when embodied, or a reserve man when called out on permanent service (and therefore part of the regular forces), who enlists without fulfilling the proper conditions into any of the regular, Indian, colonial, or reserve forces, or territorial force, or the Royal Navy, is guilty of *fraudulent enlistment*.

*Limitation clause.*—A man can always be tried for fraudulent enlistment except when three years have elapsed between the commission of the offence and the charge being made, and the offender has served during those three years in an exemplary manner.

The only effect on the offender will then be that, as he has chosen to enter into a new contract to serve, he will be held to the terms of that contract or last attestation, and all service rendered by him prior to such last attestation will be forfeited.

The obtaining of a free kit should not form a part of the particulars of a charge for fraudulent enlistment when trial takes place after the three years' limit.

The confession of fraudulent enlistment, false statement as to fraudulent enlistment and penalties on conviction of fraudulent enlistment are referred to in the paragraphs treating of desertion.

- 171. ATTEMPTING FRAUDULENT ENLISTMENT.**— Soldiers of the regular forces who attempt to fraudulently enlist, or make a false answer on attestation, are liable to be proceeded against before a court of

summary jurisdiction or to be tried by court-martial for the offence.

A soldier on furlough in plain clothes who offered himself as a recruit, but was refused on the ground that it was Sunday, was tried under this heading.

- 172. REPEATED OFFENCES.**—Fraudulent enlistment with regard to trial and punishment is similarly treated to desertion (not on active service), and can be awarded a higher punishment for a second offence.

Desertion may be reckoned as a previous case of fraudulent enlistment, but it must be remembered S. 13 that a man must have served between the date of his desertion and that of his fraudulent enlistment. Suppose, for instance, that a man deserts from a regiment and is apprehended, tried, and convicted, and sent back to his regiment at the expiration of his sentence. After doing duty for some days he again absents himself and enlists in another regiment. On being found out he would be charged with fraudulent enlistment, and the former conviction of desertion would be reckoned against him.

A man who has fraudulently enlisted in a regiment, and is then discovered to have deserted a year previously from another regiment, is only liable under ordinary circumstances to be tried for a single offence, either of desertion or fraudulent enlistment, and would in ordinary cases be charged with the latter crime.

Exceptional instances might arise in which the previous desertion was completely proved with regard to *intent*, as, for example, if the man deserted to evade foreign service. There is then no absolute bar to his being tried both for that desertion and the subsequent fraudulent enlistment, but the desertion would not count as a previous instance for the purpose of awarding the higher penalty of penal servitude.

A soldier who has been in several regiments and

fraudulently enlists in the artillery is only liable to be tried on the one charge of so doing. Where a second charge of fraudulent enlistment is made it must have reference to fraudulently enlisting in one of the previous regiments.

As a rule a soldier will be tried in his present K. 526 corps, and will be held to serve on the terms of his last attestation, but if he has fraudulently enlisted in the reserve forces he will be sent back to his former corps.

- 173. DISPENSATION WITH TRIAL.**—A soldier confessing desertion or fraudulent enlistment may (if he is liable to be tried) have his trial dispensed with by competent military authority, and that authority shall order that, instead of being tried by court-martial, he shall suffer the same forfeitures and deductions from pay as if he had been convicted of 167 the offence by court-martial. Any forfeitures or deductions of pay prescribed by Royal Warrant may be excepted by the terms of the order. An entry of the order is made in the conduct sheets, as if the K. 544 soldier had been convicted by court-martial.

- 174. FALSE ATTESTATION.**—In the minor cases of S. 33 illegal enlistment a man of the regular forces, reserve T.F.A.10 forces, or territorial forces, or a civilian, is liable to be S.R. 161 tried for making a false statement on attestation either S. 99 by a military or civil court, according to circumstances.

When the offender belongs to H.M. naval forces K. 521 the case should be referred to the Secretary to the Admiralty, asking whether it is desired to claim him, before taking steps to bring him to trial.

Where a man denies that he has previously served and it is found that he has served in several regiments, he can only be charged with one offence of making a false statement, and is not subject to separate charges in regard of each such regiment.

In order to prove that a man has given a false S. 163 answer on attestation, one of the attestation papers signed by the soldier must be produced in evidence. An incorrect statement as to age should never be made the subject of a charge, as it is impossible to prove that a man knows his own age. There is no penalty, again, in a man enlisting under an assumed name, provided it be not done for a fraudulent purpose. In connection with this offence it is often forgotten that a trial cannot take place if three years have elapsed since the date of the attestation.

- 175. ILLEGAL ENLISTMENT.**—A serious offence in connection with enlistment occurs when a man who has been discharged with disgrace from His Majesty's forces, or dismissed with disgrace from the Navy, enlists in the regular forces or the territorial forces without declaring the circumstances of his discharge. The expression 'discharged with disgrace' means discharged with ignominy, discharged as incorrigible and worthless, discharged for misconduct, or discharged on account of conviction for felony or of a sentence of penal servitude. In proving the offence it must be shown that the man knew that he had been discharged with disgrace; and if the offender belonged to the Navy, the actual words 'dismissed with disgrace' must occur in his record of discharge.

The felony by reason of which a man has been discharged may have been committed before he entered the service.

- 176. ABSENCE WITHOUT LEAVE.**—A man can be punished for absence when he goes away and stays away from the place, regiment, or barrack where he ought to be, without leave being in proper form granted to him.

It should be clear that the offender did not *intend* to quit the service or to absent himself in order to evade some particular duty. In these cases he would

usually be tried on a more serious charge, if not for desertion.

Absence from one particular part of a barrack to any place within (so to speak) the same military atmosphere would not, as a rule, warrant a conviction, to justify which it is essential that the absence must be from the military supervision to which the prisoner is ordinarily subject. But if it is a soldier's duty to be in one part of the barrack and he cannot be found when wanted his absence from a part only of the barrack may amount to absence without leave.

A soldier is only liable to penalties in respect of the time during which he voluntarily absents himself. If he can prove that he was prevented by force or misadventure from returning in proper time he cannot be punished, even although such compulsory detention arose out of an illegal act.

*On furlough.*—A soldier on furlough who is prevented from returning by sickness or any other cause S. 173 can get his furlough extended for a month by applying, in accordance with regulation, to a military officer, or to a Justice of the Peace, and is not liable to punishment on account of such further absence. K. 1312

If a soldier does not return at the expiration of his furlough, he is punished for either absence or desertion, according to circumstances. Five days after the K. 1300 end of his leave he is reported to the police as a deserter if he has not returned or sent a valid excuse.

*Breaking out of barracks.*—This offence consists in S. 10 a soldier quitting barracks, etc., at a time when he had no right to do so, either because he was on duty or under punishment, or because of some regulation or order; and it is immaterial whether the offence was managed by violence, stratagem, disguise, or simply by walking past a sentry unnoticed. A charge of 'breaking out of quarters' would hold good in the case of a man improperly leaving one part of a barrack for another, where he had no right to be.

**177. OVER TWENTY-ONE DAYS.**—Illegal absence can K. 487 now be dealt with summarily by a commanding 673 officer or by a court-martial. When a soldier (other S. 72 than an absconded recruit) or a man of the reserve R. 125 or territorial forces who is subject to military law is T.F.A.24 absent without leave for twenty-one days (and has R.F.A. not been taken into custody), a court of inquiry is 19 ordered to assemble, which takes evidence on oath sufficient to prove the illegal absence of the soldier and any deficiencies of kit that were noticed at the 274 time of his first absenting himself.

A record of the declaration of the court with regard to the above facts is preserved in a special regimental book, and the record thus made is admissible as evidence against the accused, when tried, or, if he is not apprehended, has the legal effect of a conviction for desertion.

*Not desertion.*—It is a common error to suppose K. 514 that absence without leave over twenty-one days constitutes desertion. If, however, a man is absent twenty-one days, he is reported to the police as a deserter, and if he has no valid excuse for being so long absent, he can be brought up on a charge of desertion, and it will rest for him to prove that he did not go away with the intention of quitting the service.

The crimes of absence without leave and desertion are intimately connected, and the officer who sends the case for trial has to decide whether there is sufficient reason to believe that the absence of an accused arose from an *intention* to desert. The court, S. 56 if they have any doubt on the matter, can always find the accused guilty of the lesser offence.

**178. UNDER TWENTY-ONE DAYS.**—Absence without K. 493 leave up to twenty-one days is usually dealt with summarily by a commanding officer, who may for this offence award detention for any period not exceeding twenty-eight days; but the number of

days' detention awarded, if it exceed seven, must not be more than the number of days of absence. For P.W. absence not exceeding seven days' detention up to 902 168 hours may be awarded. S. 46

- 179. RESERVE AND TERRITORIAL FORCES.**—Men of the reserve and territorial forces when not subject to R.F.A. military law are, in certain cases, subject to trial for 6, 15 absence either by a military or civil court; as, for 152 example, when a man of the territorial force fails to appear when called out for embodiment or training, or when a reserve man does not appear when called out on permanent service or for training, or in aid of the civil power, or fails to attend at any place to which he is ordered in accordance with the regulations of the Reserve Act.
- 180. TRIAL BY CIVIL COURT.**—In all cases of desertion, absence and making false statements on attestation, and for certain offences connected with the R.F.A. payment of the reserve forces, men of the reserve forces, and of the territorial forces, are liable to be tried by a civil court instead of a court-martial, and are punished, according to the nature and degree of the offence, by fine or imprisonment. T.R. 247 6, 15 61 152

## CHAPTER XXI

*CRIMES—(continued)*

181. SCANDALOUS CONDUCT. 182. EMBEZZLEMENT—Fraudulently misapplying—Stealing. 183. DISGRACEFUL CONDUCT—Theft—From Soldier—From Civilian. 184. DRUNKENNESS—No Excuse. 185. OF OFFICER—Of Non-commissioned Officer—Of Soldier. 186. JURISDICTION OF COURT—Simple Offences. 187. MAKING AWAY WITH KIT. 188. FALSE STATEMENTS. 189. CONTEMPT OF COURT—Of Soldier—Of Civilian—Of Accused—Of Counsel. 190. FALSE EVIDENCE. 191. CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD ORDER. 192. CIVIL OFFENCES.

- 181. SCANDALOUS CONDUCT OF AN OFFICER.**—An S. 16 officer who is convicted of behaving in a scandalous manner unbecoming the character of an officer and a gentleman *must* be cashiered, and there is no power to award any other punishment for this offence.

The essence of the offence lies in the word *scandalous*. If an officer behaves in a scandalous manner he necessarily behaves in a manner unbecoming an officer and a gentleman. The fact by itself of behaving in a manner unbecoming an officer and a gentleman is not a military offence. There appears no authority by which an officer charged under this section could be found guilty of a lesser offence, such as conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline, though formerly such was the custom.

Scandalous conduct may partake either of a military or social character, but in the latter case an

officer should not be charged with it unless the offence be of a character which reflects so much discredit on the officer or his corps that his removal from it is a necessity.

This section enables a court-martial to undertake in some measure the functions of a Court of Honour. It is probably for this reason that it appears to have been regarded with disfavour by the legal profession as not in accordance with the spirit of English law.

- 182. EMBEZZLEMENT.**—Embezzlement is the fraudulently converting to one's own use property received, taken possession of, or held for another. It differs from ordinary theft in being a breach of trust as well as a fraud, and can only be committed by persons acting in the capacity of clerk or servant to the party defrauded.

A pay-sergeant who made away with money entrusted to him for paying his company, or a canteen-sergeant who appropriated canteen money, being both in the position of clerk or servant, would be charged with embezzling it.

*Fraudulently misapplying* is an offence very similar to embezzlement, and is constituted when a person who is employed in the public service of His Majesty fraudulently converts any chattel, money or security entrusted to him, by virtue of such appointment, to any other purpose than the public service.

The following would be an instance of fraudulent misapplication :—A pay-sergeant receives money from a man of his company to put in the regimental savings bank and appropriates it. He does not steal it, because it has been given to him : he does not embezzle it, because he is neither the clerk nor servant of the owner.

*Stealing*, for the purposes of this section, does not refer to ordinary cases of theft, but rather to those

cases where a man has legally access to and temporary control over property, and fraudulently makes away with it.

It will be noticed that this section deals entirely with persons in a position of trust, such as a pay-master or pay-sergeant, and does not affect the private soldier.

With regard to pay-sergeants and other non-commissioned officers, it should be remembered that they can only be rendered liable to repay an amount for which they, strictly speaking, ought to be held responsible.

A man charged with embezzlement may be found guilty of stealing or fraudulently misapplying, and a man charged with stealing may be found guilty of embezzlement or fraudulently misapplying.

**183. DISGRACEFUL CONDUCT OF A SOLDIER.**—All offences included in S. 18 come under the general heading of disgraceful conduct. A charge should not, however, be headed by the term ‘disgraceful conduct’ unless it be of a cruel, indecent, or unnatural kind. (5)

*Theft.*—Theft or larceny may be defined as the wilfully wrongful or fraudulent taking possession of the goods of another with a felonious intent to deprive the owner of his property in them.

It is now enacted that a fraudulent conversion by a bailee of goods obtained in the first instance lawfully also constitutes theft.

*From soldier.*—Owing to the manner in which soldiers live, and the opportunity they have of taking one another’s property, theft from a comrade is looked upon as a very serious military offence. Hence the theft by a soldier from a comrade is generally dealt with by a court-martial, and would be visited by more severe punishment than would be inflicted by a civil court.

Before charging a soldier with theft of a comrade’s property, care must be taken that the articles

are really stolen, and not borrowed, or otherwise legally obtained. Improper possession of a com- K. 556  
rade's property can be dealt with under S. 40.

*From civilian.*—It should be noticed that in order to charge for theft under this section the property stolen must belong to a public or regimental service or to some officer or soldier. Theft from a civilian must be charged under S. 41, or disposed of by a civil court. In garrison towns civilians often apply to have the case disposed of by a court-martial, as the articles stolen are either restored to the owner or S. 75 their value made good by means of the stoppages to K. 586 which the prisoner is usually sentenced.

Offences of a fraudulent nature which are not elsewhere specifically mentioned in the Act are dealt with under Sub-section 5, *e.g.* :—

A soldier fraudulently obtains a high figure of merit by firing more rounds at the target than he was entitled to use.

- 184. DRUNKENNESS.**—A person subject to military law S. 19 can be tried on a charge of drunkenness, whether committed on duty or not on duty. Drunkenness M. iii includes intoxication from the effects of opium or any 25 similar drug as well as from liquor.

The offence is more serious when committed on K. 510 duty, *i.e.*, when an offender was actually in the performance of some military duty, or was drunk on parade, or on the line of march at any period from the date of departure till the date of arrival at destination. M. iii 28

A soldier may be continuously on duty when employed on some special service, such as aiding the civil power or rendering some public service, and would be considered on duty while the special service lasts, even although not always actively employed.

When the offence of drunkenness is to be submitted to a court-martial it is essential to allege in the particulars of the charge any facts showing that the offender

was on duty or had been warned for duty, or by reason of drunkenness was found unfit for duty (*vide* charge sheet 52).

In order to enable a court-martial to award field punishment it is necessary to allege 'when on active service.'

*No excuse.*—Drunkenness is, by English law, held K. 575 to be no excuse for crime. The wisdom of this is M. iii apparent, for, if it were considered a palliation, an 31 offender before deliberately committing a crime would get drunk.

On the other hand, it is evident that cases will occur when a man may commit a crime in a drunken fit which he would be loth to do if he were sober. This is especially the case in offences of insubordination and where the intention is an essential part of the crime, and although, legally speaking, the drunkenness is no excuse, yet a military court would be justified in treating the offence more leniently than would otherwise be the case.

If the charges against a soldier do not allege drunkenness, and he was drunk at the time he committed an offence with which he is charged, the prosecutor should bring out this fact in evidence.

**185. OF OFFICER.**—Whether the act be committed on duty or not the charge should be "drunkenness." The charge of being drunk on duty *under arms* is done away with, and it is not now necessary to bring the offence of ordinary drunkenness under the head of S. 16 scandalous conduct, or of conduct to the prejudice S. 40 of good order and military discipline.

*Of non-commissioned officer.*—A non-commissioned S. 183 officer (a term including lance-corporals and acting bombardiers) can be tried for drunkenness, whether committed on or off duty. A commanding officer 48 has, moreover, complete discretion whether to send the case for trial or not, as the obligation of dealing summarily with a private soldier guilty of simple

drunkenness (as defined in the King's Regulations) does not extend to the case of a non-commissioned officer. If he disposes of the case summarily he cannot award a fine.

*Of soldier.*—The offences of drunkenness that can be tried by court-martial include every case of drunkenness on duty or when an offender is drunk after being warned for duty, or when by reason of his drunkenness he is unfit for duty, or (in cases of simple drunkenness) when he has been drunk on not less than four occasions in the preceding twelve months.

It is generally held that if a soldier is found to be drunk when *unexpectedly* called upon to perform some duty to which, in the ordinary course of events, he is not liable, the case should be treated as one of simple drunkenness.

A sentry drunk on his post should be tried under S. 6 S. 6.

When the particulars of the charge do not make it clear that the offender is, from the circumstances of the case, liable to trial, evidence should be taken before the finding to show that he had been drunk on not less than four occasions within the preceding twelve months.

**186. JURISDICTION OF COURT.**—A court-martial under S. 19 has absolute jurisdiction to try the offence of drunkenness under any circumstances. The practice of dealing with offences of simple drunkenness is, however, limited by S. 46, which states that a commanding officer is bound to deal summarily with a simple case of drunkenness, provided it is not more than the fourth case within twelve months, unless the soldier elects to be tried by district court-martial.

*Simple offences.*—The only case in which a court-martial would deal with the offences of simple

drunkenness which would usually be punished with fine by a commanding officer are—

1. When an accused elects to be tried by district S. 46 court-martial instead of having his case disposed of summarily.

2. When an accused is charged with an act of 119 simple drunkenness, and there does not appear to have been four previous instances in the preceding twelve months.

In such cases the court should not award a punishment greater than that which a commanding officer could, under the circumstances, inflict.

**187. MAKING AWAY WITH KIT, &c.**—In cases of S. 24 making away with kit or equipments alternative 219 charges are usually made when there is any doubt about the proof of the pawning, selling, etc., being sufficient. In the absence of evidence of some positive act of pawning or selling arms, equipment, K. 562 clothing, etc., a charge of making away with cannot be sustained and should not be preferred. It will be sufficient to prefer a charge of ‘losing by neglect.’

The expression ‘equipments’ includes any article issued to a soldier for his use or entrusted to his care for military purposes. A soldier servant could not be tried under this section for making away with his livery, or a mess waiter for losing property belonging to a mess, or a soldier for spending money temporarily entrusted to him.

A man can be tried for making away with a medal, K. 1754 but not for losing it. When a medal is deficient a C.O. inquires into the case and forwards particulars to the War Office, and the soldier is either tried or the medal is replaced either at once or eventually, at the soldier’s or the public cost, according to circumstances.

**188. FALSE STATEMENTS.**—*A false declaration* has reference to declarations made by paymasters and others S. 25 S. 27

in a position of trust, and to declarations signed by officers on promotion or retirement, but it does not apply to statements in a summary of evidence or ordinary official reports or verbal statements.

A statement made by an accused in his defence, even if false, is not an offence, unless he makes a wholly irrelevant false accusation, but the case must be very special to justify any proceedings against an accused on account of his defence. R. 60

A soldier stating a falsehood to a superior which does not come within the exact terms of S. 27 would be summarily punished or charged under S. 40.

- 189. CONTEMPT OF COURT.**—It is the duty of the president to keep order in the court, to check the use of insulting and threatening language (whether spoken or written), and to put a stop to any interruption or disturbance. R. 59

A person guilty of any contempt of court should be warned of the punishment which may be inflicted for that offence.

In ordinary cases, an interruption to the proceedings will be best dealt with by accepting an apology or by ordering the offender (if a civilian) to be turned out of the court.

*Of officer or soldier.*—When a contempt of court is committed by a person *subject to military law*, he can be taken into military custody, and can be tried by another court for contempt. S. 28

When the court is insulted or its proceedings disturbed, it may summarily award by order, under the hand of the president, imprisonment or (in the case of a soldier) detention for a period not exceeding twenty-one days.

*Of civilian.*—When contempt of court is committed by a person not subject to military law, the offender should be excluded from the court, or the offence S. 126 should be reported under the hand of the president S. 190

to the High Court of Justice in England, or Ireland, or to the Court of Session in Scotland.

No more force than is actually necessary should Sm.436 be used in removing the offender from the court, and if he is guilty of any disturbance outside a policeman should be sent for to remove him.

Application to a civil court necessitates expense, 228 and hence a full report of the case must be sent to K. App. the War Office through the general officer in command. viii

*Of accused.*—An accused who, when being tried O'D. 88 by court-martial, is guilty of contempt of court, and whom it is not thought expedient to try for that contempt before another court, may be summarily punished by order under the hand of the president.

The award must immediately follow the contempt, and the following course will be pursued.

The court, after the president signs the order for the detention, may adjourn until the date at which such punishment expires, and then resume the trial; or if this course (having regard to the attendance of witnesses) is inconvenient, they may conclude the proceedings (except the sentence), make the award for contempt, and then adjourn, reassembling for the purpose of considering their sentence for the offence under trial.

To summarily punish for contempt of court a person who is under trial, though legal, requires very exceptional circumstances to justify it, and it must be remembered that even though he interrupts the proceedings the trial cannot proceed in his absence.

*Of counsel.*—Counsel are liable to be punished by S. 129 a civil court for contempt of a military court to the same extent as if they committed the offence in one of the High Courts of Justice.

The president may, by an order in writing, order a counsel to be removed from the court, but must certify the offence committed to a High Court or Court of Session.

The term *contempt of court* is sometimes used in a wider sense than above referred to, and includes the offences of witnesses (including accused persons who give evidence) in relation to courts-martial.

- 190. FALSE EVIDENCE.**—A person commits the offence S. 29 of *perjury* who, when duly sworn and examined as M. vii a witness in a judicial proceeding, asserts some 72 fact or condition of things material to the issue which he does not at the time believe to be true, or as to the truth of which he knows he is ignorant.

The section in the Army Act has, however, a wider application, inasmuch as the false statement may be made in *any proceeding* before a court-martial, or a court of inquiry, or the commanding officer, and it is not necessary to show, upon a charge framed in the words of the section, that it is material to the issue.

The production of the proceedings of the court-martial before which the false swearing is alleged to have taken place is not enough to prove that the accused swore as alleged. The member of the court who recorded the proceedings, or some person present when the alleged offence took place, must testify to the facts. The evidence of one witness without corroboration in some material respect is not sufficient to prove the falsehood of the matter sworn.

- 191. CONDUCT TO THE PREJUDICE OF GOOD S. 40 ORDER AND MILITARY DISCIPLINE.**—The offence charged must not be one which can be met by any other specific section. Stress must be laid on the word *military*, and offences of a social character or connected with civilians should not be charged M. iii under this section, unless they are of a nature tending 32 to infringe military discipline.

It has been decided that a soldier cannot be O'D.103 charged under S. 40 for impertinence to a civilian,

or refusing to refund money borrowed from a civilian or soldier. A non-commissioned officer, however, who took advantage of his military position in borrowing and not refunding money to a soldier might be tried.

A bandsman might be tried under this section with not taking proper care of the instruments in his charge.

A charge of displaying the white flag in the presence of an enemy is to be framed under this section; as also a charge of improperly possessing a comrade's property, where there is no evidence of theft. K. 555

Attempts to commit offences specified in the Army Act should, unless specially provided for, be charged under this section.

- 192. CIVIL OFFENCES.**—By S. 41 offences punishable by the law of England, if committed by persons subject to military law, are, with certain limitations as to the place of trial in the case of the five most serious offences, triable by court-martial, and can be punished to the same extent as such offences would be punished by a civil court. A military court must not, however, exceed the powers given to it by the Army Act. S. 41  
59  
M. iii  
34  
M. vii 2

There are many minor civil offences which would be ordinarily dealt with by court-martial, such as an assault on a civilian, or injury to private property. Many of these petty offences are undoubtedly 'to the prejudice of good order and military discipline,' and would be liable to trial accordingly. An offence charged under S. 41 cannot be tried by a regimental court-martial without the permission of a superior officer. An K. 487  
offence charged under S. 41 cannot be tried by a K. 548

When offences against civil law are tried by court-martial under S. 41, although technical terms need not be used in the charge, the essence of the civil offence must be expressed, *e.g.*, in a case of damaging

property the charge must aver the damage to have been done 'wilfully' or 'maliciously.'

Offences against the ordinary criminal code of the K. Ap. country should be notified to the local police, in viii order that they may be investigated and punished by the civil criminal tribunals.

In cases of murder where the accused and deceased were both subject to the Army Act, the magistrates should transmit a copy of the depositions to the War Office, in order that the Secretary of State may decide whether it is expedient to take steps for a speedy trial under the Homicide Act of 1862.

## CHAPTER XXII

*PUNISHMENTS*

193. PUNISHMENTS.—Civil Offences—Gradation of.  
 194. SCALE OF PUNISHMENTS—Warrant Officers.  
 195. EXECUTION OF SENTENCE. 196. PUNISHMENT OF OFFICER. 197. CASHIERING AND DISMISSAL.  
 198. FORFEITURE OF RANK—Honorary Rank—Medals. 199. REPRIMAND. 200. DEATH. 201. PENAL SERVITUDE. 202. IMPRISONMENT AND DETENTION. 203. DISCHARGE. 204. REDUCTION. 205. FORFEITURES. 206. FORFEITURE ON CONVICTION—Forfeiture of Pay. 207. FINES. 208. STOPPAGES—As to Kit—As to Property—As to Moneys. 209. PENAL STOPPAGES—Of Officer—Of Soldier. 210. FIELD PUNISHMENT. 211. COMBINING PUNISHMENTS. 212. COMMUTING PUNISHMENTS.

193. PUNISHMENTS.—Under the old law the expression used in reference to the punishment of an offence was ‘such punishment as a general or other court-martial may award.’ The Act now assigns a maximum punishment to each offence, which need only be given when the offence is of the worst type or when an example must be made.

*Peremptory punishments.*—The two exceptions from M. iii the above rule are the offence of behaving in a scandalous manner unbecoming the character of an officer and a gentleman, in which case the only punishment is cashiering; and the civil offence of murder, in which case death is the only punishment.

*Civil offences.*—The civil offence of murder may be **59** punished by death, of treason by death or less punishment, of manslaughter, treason-felony, or rape, by penal servitude or less punishment, subject to the restrictions laid down in S. 41.

All other civil offences may be punished by imprisonment or such less punishment as may be awarded by a civil court. In dealing with civil offences a military court must not exceed its powers as laid down in the scale.

*Gradation of.*—The punishments in order of severity **S. 44** are placed in a scale, and when a certain punishment is not peremptorily ordered, any punishment lower in the scale can be awarded, due regard being had to its suitability to the offence.

**194. SCALE OF PUNISHMENTS.**—The following table shows both the scale of punishments and the maximum powers of the several courts. On active service the additional punishments of forfeiture of pay up to three months and the authorized field punishments can be inflicted by any court :—

## SCALE OF PUNISHMENT.

Sec.	Officers	Court by which tried
44 187	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>a. Death.</li> <li>b. Penal servitude, not less than 3 years.</li> <li>c. Imprisonment, with or without hard labour, for 2 years.</li> <li>d. Cashiering.</li> <li>e. Dismissal from H.M.'s service.</li> <li>f. Forfeiture of seniority of rank and medals.</li> <li>g. Reprimand or severe reprimand.</li> <li>h. Stoppages.</li> </ul>	General court-martial.

	Soldiers	Court by which tried
48	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>a. Death.</li> <li>b. Penal servitude, not less than 3 years.</li> </ul>	
44	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>c. Imprisonment, with or without hard labour, for 2 years.</li> <li>d. Detention for 2 years.</li> <li>e. Discharge with ignominy.</li> <li>f. Forfeitures.</li> </ul>	
47 181 183	<ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>g.<sup>2</sup> Detention for 42 days.</li> <li>h.<sup>3</sup> Forfeiture of seniority of rank of N.C. officer or reduction to lower grade or ranks</li> <li>k.<sup>4</sup> Fines, stoppages.</li> <li>l.<sup>5</sup> Dismissal of a Territorial.</li> <li>m.<sup>6</sup> Dismissal or reduction to lower grade of pay of schoolmaster.</li> </ul>	Regimental court-martial. District court-martial.

<sup>2</sup> Non-commissioned officers tried on board H.M.'s ships cannot be awarded detention.

M. 609

<sup>3</sup> A non-commissioned officer above the rank of corporal is not in future to be tried by a regimental court-martial (except on board H.M.'s ships), unless authorised by G.O. commanding district.

K. 438

<sup>4</sup> Under the Royal Warrant forfeitures can only be awarded by general and district courts-martial.

T.R. 216

<sup>5</sup> A C.O. has power to award dismissal as a punishment.

<sup>6</sup> An army schoolmaster cannot be reduced to the ranks unless he has been transferred from the ranks.

*Warrant Officers.*—A warrant officer holding an honorary commission ranks as an officer and is punished as such.

A warrant officer (not holding an honorary commission) cannot be tried by a regimental court-martial, and if tried by a district court can only be awarded the following punishments :—

Sec.	Person tried	Punishment	Court of trial
S. 182	Warrant officer	1. Dismissal. 2. Reduction to a lower class or place on his list. 3. Reduction to a lower grade, or to the ranks (if originally enlisted as a soldier).* 4. Forfeitures, fines, stoppages.	District court-martial.

**195. EXECUTION OF A SENTENCE.**—A court-martial has nothing to do with the details of carrying out a punishment.

It is the duty of the confirming officer to see that M. v a sentence is carried into effect, and he will obtain, 100 when required, the approval of the civil authorities, and in all cases will give the necessary directions for the execution of the sentence. Abroad, a provost- S. 74 marshal may be ordered to carry out a punishment.

**196. PUNISHMENT OF OFFICER.**—The sentences of 79 death, penal servitude, cashiering, or dismissal passed on an officer must, if tried in India, be confirmed by the Commander-in-Chief in India, and if elsewhere by the King (*vide Court-martial Warrants*).

An officer shall be sentenced to be cashiered before S. 44 he is sentenced to penal servitude or imprisonment.

---

\* Any one of the first three of the above punishments may be combined with the last. A general court-martial has power to award the above punishments either in addition to or in substitution for other punishments.

- 197. CASHIERING AND DISMISSAL.**—The distinction Sm. 146 between cashiering and dismissal of an officer has never been clearly defined. It is generally held that cashiering is a bar to an officer serving under the Crown again in any capacity, while dismissal does not carry with it any further penalty.
- 198. FORFEITURE OF RANK.**—An officer can be sentenced to forfeiture of seniority of rank, either in the army or in his regiment, or in both, by altering the date of his commission, but he cannot be reduced from one rank to another. R. 47 Ap. 11 (10)
- Honorary rank.*—An officer who has retired from the service with honorary rank is liable to have that rank cancelled by an order in the *Gazette* if he misconducts himself.
- Medals.*—In addition to or without any other punishment, an officer may be sentenced to forfeit any P.W. medal or decoration in his possession except the 124 580 Victoria Cross, or an order, such as the Bath or the Michael and George, of which His Majesty is the donor, or a medal or decoration conferred by a foreign Power.
- 199. REPRIMAND.**—Reprimands vary from a public and S. 44 severe reprimand to a private reprimand. A public reprimand may be administered at the head of a regiment, brigade, or division, paraded for the purpose; or it may be conveyed in general orders. Private reprimands are usually given by the commanding officer of a regiment or brigade at his quarters, in the presence of officers of the regiment, or of officers of equal and superior rank only, or simply in the presence of a staff officer.
- The manner and time of delivering the reprimand is fixed by the confirming officer.
- 200. DEATH.**—A prisoner would be sentenced to be either hanged or shot, according to whether it was a civil

or military offence which had rendered him liable to the penalty of death.

A sentence of death can only be passed by a general, or field-general court-martial, and then only with the concurrence of two-thirds of its members in the case of a general court-martial, and by a unanimous vote in the case of the latter court.

An officer who confirms a sentence is responsible for seeing it carried into effect, and after obtaining the special approval, generally necessary in cases of death, will give directions for the execution.

- 201. PENAL SERVITUDE.**—When a person has been sentenced to penal servitude, he is committed without delay by the proper authority to a penal servitude prison, and comes under the power of the Home Secretary.

A person sentenced abroad to penal servitude is sent to a prison in the United Kingdom, unless he belongs to a class with respect to which a Secretary of State has declared that such a transfer is not beneficial by reason of birth, climate, or the place of his enlistment.

All sentences of penal servitude commence from the day on which the president signs the original proceedings.

- 202. IMPRISONMENT AND DETENTION.**—The imprisonment or detention inflicted under one or more sentences must never exceed two years, and commences on the day on which the original proceedings are signed by the president.

When a court-martial passes sentence on a soldier already under sentence of imprisonment or detention, or on a soldier tried at the expiration of a term of imprisonment or detention for an offence committed or discovered during its continuance, any period passed in military custody or imprisonment by the civil power between two periods of imprison-

ment, or of detention, or between a period of imprisonment and a period of detention, or *vice versa*, is to be reckoned as part of the term. But where there is even a single day's actual freedom, whether by release or escape, the continuity is broken.

Terms of imprisonment or detention not amounting to six months will be awarded in days, and terms of imprisonment of one year and two years in years. All other terms of imprisonment or detention will be awarded in months, or, if required, in months and days. K. 585

The word month in a sentence of imprisonment or detention means, unless the contrary is expressed, a calendar month, and a year means twelve calendar months.

In calculating the date on which sentences expire K. 644 the rule will be apparent from the following examples, viz. :— 129

(a) A sentence of eight months' imprisonment or detention awarded on September 30 expires on the following May 29. If awarded on October 1 it expires on May 31.

(b) A sentence of nine months' imprisonment or detention awarded on May 29, 30, 31, expires on the last day of the following February.

A soldier convicted of offences under Secs. 17 and K. 607 18 (4) (5) of the Army Act, or of any offences of a similar character under S. 41, or who has been sentenced to be discharged with ignominy (except for a breach of discipline only), will be committed to a public prison.

A soldier convicted of an offence constituting a breach of discipline only, will be committed to a detention barrack; but if the term of detention to be undergone does not exceed 168 hours, and he cannot be received in a detention barrack, the punishment may be carried out in duly certified detention rooms.

In the case of a unit or draft being ordered abroad, S. 67 the general officer commanding will make arrangements for a soldier undergoing imprisonment or detention to be delivered up to military custody, so that he can be taken with the regiment, but the S. 63 offender cannot be recommitted to a prison abroad.

Soldiers under sentence whose removal is approved, are usually released on embarkation, and if this is not done, on disembarkation.

When troops move from one station to another either at home or abroad the soldiers under sentence confined in detention rooms are to be taken with their units and recommitted to the detention rooms at the new station.

Soldiers sentenced to imprisonment or detention abroad will not be committed to or retained in a civil prison if there is room in a detention barrack.

A soldier sentenced to more than twelve months' imprisonment or detention in India or in a colony is sent to a prison or detention barrack in the United Kingdom, unless he belongs to a class with respect to which a Secretary of State has declared that such a transfer is not beneficial.

When a regiment abroad moves from colony to colony it can take its soldiers under sentence with it, but they can only be recommitted to a military or authorised prison.

When a corps is removed from abroad to the United Kingdom, its soldiers under sentence will accompany it, and if not released on board ship will be committed to prison on arrival.

When a soldier is released from imprisonment or detention at any hour he is confined to barracks for the remainder of the day, but is exempt from any duty.

A sentence of imprisonment or detention is not affected by the offender being discharged or dismissed or otherwise ceasing to be subject to military law, e.g., a special reservist sentenced to imprisonment

or detention during training can be kept in prison for the whole term of his sentence, although the period of training expires before the completion of the sentence.

- 203. DISCHARGE.**—Soldiers sentenced to penal servitude and imprisonment may in addition be sentenced to be discharged with ignominy, and should be so sentenced in the case of persistent offenders, and for offences of a disgraceful nature and for an offence under S. 32. Prisoners sentenced abroad to discharge with ignominy will be sent to the United Kingdom so as to arrive before the expiration of their imprisonment. S. 44 175 K. 612

Whether sentenced to discharge or not, all soldiers who have undergone penal servitude are to be discharged, and not allowed to rejoin the service.

- 204. REDUCTION.**—A non-commissioned officer may, by the sentence of a court-martial, be ordered to forfeit seniority of rank, or be reduced to any lower grade or to the ranks, either in addition to or without any other punishment, but a regimental court-martial should not deal with non-commissioned officers above the rank of corporal. S. 183 R. 47 K. 438

Regimental courts-martial for the trial of *any* non-commissioned officers can, however, be held on board H.M.'s ships, but their power of punishment is restricted to reduction, fines, and stoppages. M. 605 57 137

A non-commissioned officer should always be sentenced to be reduced to the ranks before a sentence of penal servitude, imprisonment, or detention is passed, although these sentences necessarily involve a reduction to the ranks.

Care must be taken in wording a sentence of reduction when the prisoner holds acting rank or an appointment. A non-commissioned officer can only be reduced to or from a permanent rank. Thus a lance-sergeant could not be sentenced to be reduced

to a corporal, nor could a lance-corporal be reduced to the ranks.

When a prisoner holds acting rank it should be 213 noticed in the charge sheet, but no reference to it should be made in awarding the sentence.

Any non-commissioned officer may be reduced to a lower grade or to the ranks by the Army Council, the Commander-in-Chief in India, and on active service by an officer commanding in chief in the field and any general officer he may appoint.

**205. FORFEITURES.**—A soldier can be sentenced by a S. 44 general or district court-martial to forfeit—

1. All or any of his past service towards pension. P.W.
2. All or any deferred pay already earned. 1065
3. All or any of his good-conduct badges. 1043
4. Any medal or decoration (other than the Victoria Cross), together with the annuity or gratuity belonging to it. 1022 1160

But none of the above forfeitures shall be awarded if the conviction or the sentence of the court is such as to entail such forfeitures.

Where a soldier signs a confession that he has S. 73 been guilty of desertion or fraudulent enlistment, K. 543 a competent authority may, by order, dispense with 173 his trial, and award the same forfeiture and deductions from pay as a court-martial could award for the offence, or as are consequential upon conviction of the offence, except such of them as may be mentioned in the order.

**206. FORFEITURE ON CONVICTION.**—Certain for- 167 feitures necessarily result from conviction of an offence or sentence of a court or discharge as a bad character.

A soldier who is found guilty of desertion or fraud- S. 79 ulent enlistment, or who confesses guilt of desertion S. 161 or fraudulent enlistment and (being liable to trial) 173 has his trial dispensed with, or who has fraudulently P.W. enlisted, but whose trial is barred by reason of his 1062

having served in an exemplary manner for three years, *forfeits all service* prior to such conviction, dispensing order, or fraudulent enlistment, and has to serve for the term of his original enlistment, or, if re-engaged, for the term of his re-engagement, reckoned from the date of such conviction, dispensing order, or enlistment.

A soldier who is discharged from the army with P.W. ignominy, or as a worthless character, or on account of misconduct, or on conviction by the civil power, or on being sentenced to penal servitude, or for giving a false answer on attestation, *forfeits all qualifying service* prior to such discharge.

When service is forfeited in the above-mentioned P.W. cases, all pension, deferred pay, and good-conduct badges earned by such service are forfeited, as well as all medals\* and decorations (other than the Victoria Cross), together with the annuities and gratuities belonging to them (unless remitted by an order dispensing with trial).

A soldier who has been convicted of an offence of S. 17,18 a felonious or disgraceful character (S. 17 or 18), P.W. whether by court-martial or civil court, or who has for any offence been sentenced by a civil court to imprisonment exceeding six months, forfeits all medals and decorations (other than the Victoria Cross), together with the annuities and gratuities belonging to them.

A soldier who has been sentenced by court-martial or civil court to imprisonment exceeding six months, or who has been convicted of an offence under S. 18 of the Army Act, and a soldier who has improperly enlisted while belonging to the Army Reserve, and who on detection has been re-transferred to the reserve, forfeits all good-conduct badges.

\* Medals may be restored under certain conditions. Deferred pay and G.C. pay are in process of extinction.

*Forfeiture of pay.*—A soldier shall forfeit his pay S. 138 (a) for every day of absence on desertion or without P.W. leave ; (b) for every day of imprisonment, detention 902 or field punishment ; (c) for every day of confinement on a charge of which he is afterwards convicted by a civil court or court-martial, or on a charge of absence without leave for which he is afterwards awarded detention by his commanding officer, or in consequence of his having confessed to having been guilty of desertion or fraudulent enlistment, if forfeiture is ordered by competent authority ; (d) for every day in hospital on account of sickness certified to have been caused by an offence under the Army Act committed by him, and of which he has been found guilty ; (e) *on active service* for every day where in respect of an offence forfeiture of pay is ordered.

A commanding officer has no longer the power of 43 depriving a soldier of his pay for short absence. A soldier enters into a contract with the Government to do certain work, and if he absents himself from his duties his pay is necessarily forfeited by royal warrant.

207. FINES.—In addition to or in substitution for other S. 19 punishments, a soldier can be sentenced to a fine of 1l. for drunkenness.

Courts-martial are in certain cases called on to S. 41 administer the ordinary criminal law of England, and can in such cases fine up to the limits of that law, and the fine should be ordered to be paid to His Majesty.

208. STOPPAGES are intended, not for punishment, but S. 138 to compensate for loss sustained. When the award K. 565 of the court more than covers the actual loss or damage, the matter will be adjusted by the officer who has to make the deduction of pay.

In case of damage caused by an offence, the cause and effect must be closely related, in order to warrant

a sentence of stoppages. Thus a soldier escaping from custody would not for this purpose be said to have caused damage to a military policeman's clothes because the policeman fell down and damaged them while in pursuit of him.

*As to kit.*—When a soldier is charged with making away with or losing clothing or necessaries, the value of the articles are stated in the charge if they belong to Government, and the value has to be made good to the public—such as great-coats, shako, etc. If, however, the articles are the property of the soldier, K. 563 which he has to keep complete in number and in good order at his own expense, the value is not stated in the charge.

When the value of articles is not stated in the charge, no stoppages shall be awarded in respect of them in the sentence.

The court punishes the soldier for losing the articles in question, but need not enter into the question K. 563 of replacing them, as that is the duty of the prisoner's captain.

*As to property.*—When several men are convicted of O'D. collectively destroying public property they may 156 each be sentenced to pay the full amount of damage, and the total loss will be properly divided among those from whom the money can be recovered.

Where an accused has been sentenced to stoppages 138 in respect of stolen property, and money found upon S. 75 him has been restored to its lawful owner, he should be placed under deductions for the balance only of the stoppage awarded.

*As to moneys.*—When a soldier is accused of making away with public or other moneys in his charge, the stoppage inflicted should be limited to such a sum as might reasonably have been left in his keeping. Pay-sergeants of squadrons, troops, batteries or K. 112 companies are not to be entrusted with more money than is absolutely necessary to carry on their duties. To take charge of public money is the duty of the

officer commanding these units, and he is responsible that due supervision and proper checks are used.

- 209. PENAL STOPPAGES.**—Penal deductions can only **45** be made from the *ordinary* pay of an officer or soldier or from any sums due to him. Deductions may be S. 140 made from any prize money, or deferred pay which has been earned but not paid over, but money in the savings bank cannot be touched.

*Of Officer.*—A court-martial which has convicted S. 137 an officer of an offence may sentence him to make good any loss or damage caused by the commission of that offence. An officer may also be required to pay for loss or damage to public property, occasioned by a wrongful act or negligence and to make good the pay of any officer or soldier that he has unlawfully withheld, and he may be deprived of his ordinary pay for any period during which he is absent without leave.

*Of Soldier.*—A soldier is deprived of his pay for S. 138 every day of absence from duty arising from his own **206** fault (*vide Forfeiture of Pay*). His pay may be stopped, to make good such compensation for loss or damage as may be awarded by a court-martial, order for dispensing with trial, commanding officer, or a captain of one of His Majesty's ships; to pay a fine awarded by a court-martial, commanding officer, or civil court; and to contribute any sum ordered by the Army Council to the maintenance or cost of relief of his wife and children.

The amount of pay stopped must, after allowing for the expenses of messing and washing, leave the soldier not less than 1d. to spend.

- 210. FIELD PUNISHMENT.**—Where a soldier on active S. 44 service is guilty of any offence a court-martial may M. iii award field punishment for a period not exceeding **37** three months.

In addition to or without any other punishment a court-martial may also order that the offender forfeit ordinary pay for a period not exceeding three months.

A soldier awarded field punishment necessarily S. 138 forfeits his pay while undergoing that punishment.

Field punishment is of two kinds—field punishment M. 598 No. 1, and field punishment No. 2.

An offender sentenced to field imprisonment No. 1 may be fettered by means of irons, straps, or ropes, so as to prevent his escape. While so secured he may be attached for a period or periods to a fixed object, but he must not be so attached for more than two hours in a day, or for more than three days out of four, or for more than twenty-one days in all.

Field imprisonment No. 2 refers simply to the fettering of a man by means of irons, straps, or ropes, and does not include attachment to a fixed object.

In both cases an offender may be subjected to any hard labour, employment, or restraint to the same extent as if he had been sentenced to imprisonment with hard labour.

Field punishment must not be inflicted so as to cause injury or leave a permanent mark on the offender.

All offenders awarded field punishment shall march with their unit, carry their arms and accoutrements, perform all their military duties as well as extra fatigue duties and be treated as defaulters. While troops are actually on the move they are exempt from being tied up to a fixed object.

**211. COMBINING PUNISHMENTS.**—As a rule one of S. 44 the punishments in the scale is awarded, but in the following cases punishment may be combined :—

An officer shall be sentenced to be cashiered before he is sentenced to penal servitude or imprisonment.

An officer sentenced to forfeiture of seniority of rank may in addition be sentenced to be reprimanded.

A soldier sentenced to penal servitude or imprisonment may in addition be sentenced to be discharged with ignominy.

A non-commissioned officer may be ordered to S. 183 forfeit seniority of rank or to be reduced to a lower grade or to the ranks, in addition to any other punishment.

In addition to other punishments an offender may 205 be sentenced to any authorised deduction from pay, or to forfeit the whole or any portion of his service towards pension, or his deferred pay, or good-conduct badges or medals or decorations, together with any annuities and gratuities appertaining thereto.

In combining punishments regard must be paid to the nature and degree of the offence. Discharge with ignominy would only be awarded when the further services of the soldier are deemed undesirable. Forfeitures would not be combined with discharge with ignominy, nor would a fine be awarded except for the offence of drunkenness.

- 212. COMMUTATION OF PUNISHMENTS.—**Any punishment can be commuted to any less punishment or S. 57 punishments lower down in the scale to which an offender might have been sentenced by the same court. For example, death may be commuted to 160 penal servitude or imprisonment, penal servitude to imprisonment, imprisonment to detention, cashiering to dismissal, etc. The sentence of cashiering an officer for scandalous conduct cannot, however, be commuted or altered to any other punishment. In such a case where a less penalty is deemed to be sufficient, the Crown would grant a pardon conditional on the officer undergoing the lighter sentence.

A soldier guilty of desertion or fraudulent enlistment (and not exempted by S. 161), and a soldier S. 83 sentenced by a court-martial to a punishment not less than detention for three months, may have his punishment commuted wholly or partly to general K. 597 service by a competent military authority.

The above provision enables a man to be sent to M. x 11 serve abroad or in some other sphere, where, by reason of more work, less temptation, or otherwise, he may have a chance of turning over a new leaf and obtaining a fresh start in life.

For the purpose of commutation *field punishment* ranks next below detention in the scale of punishments.

S. 44

## CHAPTER XXIII

*CHARGES*

213. CHARGE SHEET—Description of Accused. 214. CHARGE—Statement—Particulars. 215. PERSON MAKING THE CHARGE.—216. FRAMING CHARGES—Distinct Offences—Time of Offence—Place of Offence—Loss or Damage—Words Used—Unnecessary Particulars. 217. SEVERAL CHARGES. 218. DEFECTIVE CHARGES. 219. ALTERNATIVE CHARGES. 220. JOINT CHARGES. 221. ALTERING CHARGES. 222. SEPARATE CHARGE SHEETS. 223. USE OF SEPARATE CHARGE SHEETS.

- 213. CHARGE SHEET.**—When an accused is to be tried R. 9 by court-martial a *charge sheet*, which may contain R. 10 one charge or several charges, is laid before it.

Every charge sheet will begin with the name and description of the person charged, and should state, in the case of an officer, his rank, name, and corps (if any); and in the case of a soldier, his number, rank, name, and corps (if any).

*Description of accused.*—In describing an accused it is immaterial whether he is charged by his real name or an alias so long as his identity is established. A soldier would usually be charged under the name in which he was attested and was commonly known in his regiment.

It is always necessary to show that the person charged is subject to military law. In the case of the regular forces a statement that the accused belongs to a unit of the regular army is sufficient,

though it is usual to add the words 'a soldier of the regular forces.'

If the accused belong to the territorial forces, or M. 533 to the reserves, the description must show that he was at the time of the offence subject to military law, e.g. 'an officer of the special reserve of officers'; 'a soldier of the territorial force out for training.'

In the case of a civilian (as may happen on active service) it will be necessary to expressly aver that he was 'subject to military law as a soldier (or officer). . . .

A mistake as to the name and description of the R. 33 person charged does not invalidate the charge sheet, so long as he does not object, and it is not shown that injustice is done him. The court, however may always amend the charge sheet, so as to correct the mistake, provided that it is clear that the accused is the person intended to be charged, and that he is not prejudiced in his defence by the mistake having been made.

Non-commissioned officers should be arraigned in 129 their army rank, and if they hold acting rank it should be mentioned in a bracket. Thus, 'the accused No. 42, Corporal (Lance-Sergeant) A,' etc.

The charge sheet should be signed by the C.O. of the accused. If a soldier has elected to be tried instead of submitting to a summary award, it should be so stated (in red ink) at the top of the charge sheet.

**214. CHARGE.**—A charge means an accusation that R. 9 a person amenable to military law has been guilty of an offence.

A charge should be divided into two parts :— R. 11

1. *The statement of the offence*, which should be in R. 134 the words of the Army Act. (b)

When offences against civil law are tried, though S. 41 technical terms need not be used, the essence of the civil offence must be expressed, e.g. in the case

of damaging property the charge must aver the damage to have been done 'wilfully' or 'maliciously.'

2. The *particulars*, which should be sufficiently explicit as to names, dates, and circumstances as to leave no doubt in the mind of the accused as to what offence he is charged with.

**215. PERSON MAKING THE CHARGE.**—The charges against a soldier are, in the first instance, framed by the adjutant or some other officer and the charge sheet must be signed by the officer in command of the unit to which the accused belongs.

When a commanding officer does not himself assemble a regimental court-martial he forwards a copy of the charges to the convening officer, together with his application for a higher court.

Before proceeding with a case it is the duty of the commanding officer to ascertain that the soldier is liable to trial (in respect of lapse of time). Except when it is important that the guilt or innocence of the accused should be definitely decided, it is undesirable to send a case before a court-martial when it appears doubtful if the evidence will lead to a conviction.

The convening officer is further responsible that the charge is properly made and discloses an offence under the Army Act, and that the evidence is sufficient to justify the trial of the accused.

Before convening a general court-martial in the United Kingdom the charge and summary of evidence should be submitted to the judge-advocate general.

**216. FRAMING CHARGES.**—The procedure as to charging an accused differs materially in civil and military courts.

A civil court can only try a man for offences arising out of a single transaction, while a military

court can deal at the same time with several charges referring to totally distinct offences.

Courts-martial are not bound by the technicalities of civil courts, but all vagueness in charges should be avoided, and they should be made as simple and direct as possible.

*Distinct offences.*—Each charge should state one R. 11 distinct offence in clear and simple language, alike comprehensible by the court and the accused, without legal assistance to explain terms and technicalities.

A single transaction should not as a rule be made the subject of more than one charge unless there is a doubt as to the precise nature of the offence when alternative charges are used. Thus, a man should not be tried for absence without leave and failing to appear at parade during the time of absence, as the offences alleged are necessarily part of one transaction. Where violence to a superior is accompanied by insubordinate language, the violence alone should be charged, the language being admissible in evidence as to the intent.

In no case should an offence be described in the alternative in the same charge.

A conviction of 1867 of a storekeeper for ‘fraudulently embezzling or misapplying property’ was set aside on this ground. Sm. 396

When a soldier is charged with a serious offence, K. 568 minor irregularities should not be brought forward as additional charges. Thus a man should not be tried for desertion, and also for being improperly dressed when apprehended, as the lesser offence has merged in the graver one.

*Time of offence.*—The time at which an offence was Ap. 1 committed must be stated with as great accuracy as the evidence in proof admits of. When the time is an essential factor in the charge, as in the case of a ‘sentry sleeping on his post,’ it is best to state between the hours of — and —, i.e. the time during which the accused was posted as sentry.

When the exact date or time is unknown it is sufficient to use the terms 'on or about' the — day of —.

*Place of offence.*—It is usually sufficient in a charge Ap. 1 to give a general description of the place where the offence was committed, such as 'at Aldershot,' or 'on the line of march.' If, however, the exact spot is material to the charge, as, for instance, in the case of a non-commissioned officer leaving his guard, or a sentry leaving his post, the exact guard-room or post should be named.

*Loss or damage.*—When the accused is charged with any loss or damage, the value is stated in the particulars of the charge. When a loss of money is the subject of trial, the lump sum only need be stated, and there is no necessity for distinguishing between gold, notes, etc.

In the case of articles of kit, the value is only 189 stated in reference to articles of Government property—the value of which has to be made good to 208 the public, such as a great-coat, helmet, etc. The K. 563 value of regimental necessaries or personal clothing which are issued to a soldier need not be stated, as deficiencies have to be made good by the soldier as a matter of necessity, and his captain debits his account for the same.

*Words used.*—When an offence consists of words 'used or written,' they should be inserted as accurately as possible. After the actual words it is usual to state 'or words to that effect.'

*Unnecessary particulars.*—It is undesirable to append to a charge particulars not necessarily bearing on it. Thus, in a case of absence it is unnecessary to state that the man remained absent until he was apprehended, although such a fact may very properly be proved in evidence, and affect the sentence of the court. O'D. 25

**217. SEVERAL CHARGES.**—In the case of several charges the particulars in one charge may refer to the particulars in another. Thus a first charge may specify a distinct time and place, and a second charge merely state ‘at the time and place specified in the first charge,’ instead of again repeating the date and place.

If, however, the prisoner is acquitted of the charge Ap. 1 in which the particulars are stated, and convicted of the other one, any subsequent record of conviction in regimental or other books must set out in full the particulars omitted.

**218. DEFECTIVE CHARGES.**—Where there is such a R. 11 divergence between the head of charge and the statement of particulars that each *in substance* discloses a different offence the charge is bad, and a conviction, even on a plea of guilty, could not be upheld. The incidental mention of a separate offence in the particulars would not, however, invalidate a charge, so long as the accused was distinctly informed of the charge he had to meet.

Where the head of charge disclosed an offence, but O'D. 20 the particulars did not, and the evidence proved only the facts alleged in the statement of particulars, the conviction was held to be bad.

A charge may be defective either in heading or in statement of particulars, but it would generally hold good if in the charge as a *whole* the offence was shown to be one under the Army Act, and it was described with sufficient minuteness to enable the accused to know exactly what he had to answer.

**219. ALTERNATIVE CHARGES.**—When an offence has Sm. 395 been committed the charge should be clear and simple, and not expanded or split up, as is the custom in civil courts. When there is any doubt as to how the offence should be described, or what military offence has been committed, separate alternative

charges can be used. An accused can only be convicted on one of these charges, and is necessarily R. 44 acquitted of the other.

If a man was found improperly in possession of the property of others, and it was difficult to prove exactly how it came into his keeping, alternative charges might be preferred (1) of stealing the S. 18 goods, (2) of receiving them knowing them to have been stolen.

A man, again, might be charged with using insub- S. 8 ordinate language to his superior officer, and there might be a doubt as to whether the language was sufficiently strong to justify the term 'insubordinate.' An alternative charge of 'conduct to the prejudice of good order and military discipline,' in using the S. 40 words in question, might be necessary.

A soldier whose kit is found to be deficient may be S. 24 charged with making away with it by pawning it, K. 562 or selling it, or destroying it, or may be charged with losing it by neglect; but if there is any doubt as to the sufficiency of evidence as to the positive act of pawning, selling, etc., alternative charges may be used of 'making away with' and 'losing by neglect.'

Where alternative charges are preferred, one of 105 which charges a less grave offence than the other, care must be taken that the accused does not escape the punishment applicable to the graver offence by pleading 'guilty' to the minor one.

- 220. JOINT CHARGES.**—Any number of accused persons R. 15 may be tried *together* on one or more charges for 101 offences which have been committed by them col- 131 lectively. Notice of the intention to try them together must be served on each man, and any of the accused, either before or on arraignment, may claim a separate trial, if the nature of the charge admits of it, on the ground that the evidence of the other persons accused is material to his defence.

The committing of an offence *collectively* implies a Sm. 402 certain amount of combination or mutual help, and does not refer to the commission of individual offences by men in the company of each other. Thus, a number of men who were drunk together or were absent at the same time would be tried separately; while men might be charged jointly with breaking the windows of a house, or assaulting an escort who had charge of them.

When a conspiracy among several of the accused is the essence of the charge, as in the case of mutiny or treason-felony, it is generally essential that they should be jointly arraigned.

- 221. ALTERING CHARGES.**—The president of a court- R. 17  
martial (and the judge-advocate if there is one) has R. 103  
an opportunity of seeing the charge sheet before the court assembles, and should inform the convening officer before the trial commences of any amendment he may think necessary.

The prosecutor must also of necessity see the charge sheet before the trial begins, and should report to the convening officer if there be any particulars alleged which, in his opinion, cannot be supported by evidence.

At any time during the trial a mistake in the name R. 33  
or description of the accused may be amended by the court, provided, of course, that the person charged is not thereby prejudiced in his defence by such mistake or alteration.

Charges can only be materially altered by the R. 33  
*convening* officer, and corrections must be made be- 80  
fore any of the witnesses have given their evidence.

After a trial is commenced, if the court are of R. 44  
opinion that the essence of the charge is proved, but 119  
that the particulars as alleged are defective, they may (if injustice is not thereby done to the accused) record a *special finding* amending the particulars in question.

When a charge is found to be bad after the trial has begun, the convening officer will dissolve the court, and, if further action is to be taken, will assemble a new court to try the accused on a fresh charge.

- 222. SEPARATE CHARGE SHEETS.**—The convening R. 62 officer may direct that the charges against the accused be inserted in separate charge sheets, and when a charge sheet contains more than one charge the accused, when arraigned, may claim to be tried separately in respect of any charge or charges inserted in that charge sheet. In such cases the court shall, after having been sworn, arraign and try the accused in respect of each charge sheet or charge separately *up to and including the finding*. The procedure after the finding shall be the same as if all the offences were contained on one charge sheet.

When the accused is tried on several charge sheets, the convening officer may direct that if he be convicted of one or more of the most serious offences in any charge sheet, he need not be tried on the other charge sheets.

- 223. USE OF SEPARATE CHARGE SHEETS.**—A military R. 62 court is as a rule ill adapted to deal with cases in which the evidence is complicated. The regulations with regard to separate charge sheets have been introduced in order to aid the court in arriving at a finding and the accused in making his defence. By dealing with each charge separately the evidence can with ease be confined to it, and confusion does not arise by mixing up the evidence necessary to prove one charge with the evidence bearing on the other charges.

Repeated instances of the same description of offence may be included in the same charge sheet, but offences of different descriptions should be in-

cluded in separate charge sheets, except when they form part of the same wrongful transaction.

To this may be added cases where embarrassment may arise from the facts of any of the charges being very complicated, or when a considerable time has elapsed between the commission of the offences, or when different sets of witnesses are required to prove the different offences.

In cases of repeated desertion or fraudulent enlistment; where it is desired that the higher punishment allowed for a second offence should be awarded, the charges must be on separate sheets. S. 12

## CHAPTER XXIV

## WITNESSES

224. SUMMONING OF WITNESSES. 225. ISSUE OF SUMMONS—To Soldiers under Sentence—Neglect to Summons a Witness. 226. SERVING OF SUMMONS. 227. EXEMPTION FROM SUMMONS. 228. DISOBEYING A SUMMONS. 229. PRIVILEGE OF WITNESS FROM ARREST. 230. EXPENSES OF WITNESS. 231. COMPETENCY OF WITNESSES—Compellable Witnesses. 232. CREDIBILITY OF WITNESSES. 233. OATH OF WITNESS—Refusal to be Sworn. 234. PROSECUTOR AS WITNESS. 235. MEMBER AS WITNESS. 236. PROSECUTOR'S WITNESSES. 237. WITNESSES OF ACCUSED. 238. WITNESSES IN COURT. 239. EXAMINATION OF WITNESS—Cross-examination—Re-examination. 240. EXAMINATION IN CHIEF—Leading Questions—When Admissible—Refreshing Memory. 241. CROSS-EXAMINATION—Leading Questions—Irrrelevant Questions—Degrading Questions—As to Previous Statements. 242. QUESTIONING WITNESS—Reply—Correcting Evidence. 243. PRIVILEGE AS TO ANSWERS—Criminating Answers—Degrading Answers—Professional Secrets—Official Secrets—Husband and Wife. 244. CONTRADICTION OF ANSWERS. 245. IMPEACHING CREDIBILITY OF WITNESSES. 246. CONTEMPT OF COURT.

224. SUMMONING OF WITNESSES.—Before the assembling of a court the convening officer, and after its assembly the president, are responsible that all witnesses whose attendance can reasonably be secured

are either summoned or ordered to attend. If the judgment of the summoning officer in refusing to call a witness is questioned, the court must decide R. 79 as to whether the presence of the witness referred to is essential or not, and if it differs in opinion from the summoning officer it should adjourn and report the circumstance to the convening officer.

- 225. ISSUE OF SUMMONS.**—Witnesses, subject to military law, are ordered to attend by the proper military authority, and warned to bring with them any documents or other proofs that are necessary to the trial.

When a military witness belongs to a regiment in the same place in which the court-martial is held, K. 571 application is usually made to his commanding officer. If the witness is not serving in the brigade command, in which the court is held, application is to be made to the brigade commander under whom he is serving. When there is any doubt as to who is the proper military authority, application should be made to the War Office.

Civilian witnesses are summoned to attend by an S. 125 order under the hand of the convening officer, or R. 78 the judge-advocate, or the president of the court, or the commanding officer of the accused, according to circumstances.

When documents of any kind which are necessary M. 580 to the trial are in the possession of a civilian witness a special clause must be inserted in the summons calling on him to produce them.

A person present in court may be called on to give evidence as a witness without any previous notice or formality.

*To soldiers under sentence.*—When a soldier under S. 63 sentence is required as a witness, the general or 64 other prescribed officer in command of the place K. 621 where the prison or detention barrack is situated gives the order for removal. In the United Kingdom

authority will be obtained from the War Office before an order is made for the removal of a soldier under sentence of a civil court.

*Neglect to summon a witness.*—If proper steps have R. 79 not been taken to procure the attendance of a witness whom the prosecutor or the accused desires to call, or if any witness whose attendance could not *reasonably* be procured before the assembly of the court is essential to the prosecution or defence, the court should adjourn and report the circumstances to the convening officer.

- 226. SERVING OF SUMMONS.**—A summons must be Sm. 896 served personally and in reasonable time before the 897 trial by some one in authority, such as a non-commissioned officer or a policeman. If the witness required be a married woman it is not sufficient to give the summons to her husband. Summons should be prepared in duplicate, and one retained by the server, who should note on it the place and date of serving the other.
- 227. EXEMPTION FROM SUMMONS.**—No person can M. vi claim to be exempt from the regularly issued sum- 96 mons of a civil or military court, except the King. Officials in high positions would, however, be justified in refusing to be examined on matters which it would be contrary to the public policy to disclose. Causing persons in high official position to be summoned before a court-martial without reasonable S. 40 excuse could be dealt with as a military offence.
- 228. DISOBEYING A SUMMONS.**—A witness subject to S. 9 military law who does not obey a summons or order S. 28 to attend can be tried either for disobedience of orders or contempt of court, according to circum- stances.
- A civilian witness who has been *tendered his reasonable expenses* and does not attend to a summons can be tried by a civil court of law for contempt of court. 230

The court-martial should take evidence on oath R. 78 as to the service of the summons and the tender of expenses. The president should then forward a certificate through the convening officer to the S. 126 Army Council reciting the facts and attaching a certified extract from the proceedings. No further action can be taken without instructions from headquarters.

- 229. PRIVILEGE OF WITNESS FROM ARREST.**—A S. 125 witness, whether civil or military, who has been summoned to attend as a witness before a court-martial is, during his necessary attendance on such court, and while going to or returning from it, privileged from arrest to the same extent as if it were a superior court of civil jurisdiction—*i.e.* from S. 190 arrest on civil process for debt, damage, trespass, (29) etc., but not from arrest on a criminal charge.
- 230. EXPENSES OF A WITNESS.**—In order to prevent R. 78 an *unreasonable* demand as to the procuring of wit- M. v 68 nesses, the person requiring them may be called on to defray the cost of attendance.

Travelling expenses are usually granted to witnesses attending courts-martial or courts of inquiry held solely on the public service. The claims of civilian witnesses should be certified by the president as just and reasonable. A personal allowance suitable to the claimant's station in life may also be given, and at stations abroad the established practice of the civil courts should be made the basis of settlement. (Army Allowance Regulations.)

When officers or soldiers are defendants in cases tried before civil tribunals, they will provide for the attendance, without cost to the public, of any military or other witnesses they may call for their defence.

**231. COMPETENCY OF WITNESSES.**—Formerly persons were disqualified from giving evidence owing to crime, or interest, or being parties to the proceedings, but these disqualifications have been removed by statute, and every person is competent to give evidence as a witness before a court-martial, with the following exceptions.

1. *The accused or any accused being tried jointly with him cannot be called as a witness for the prosecution.*

By the Criminal Evidence Act of 1898 a person charged is a competent witness, but (1) he can only give evidence for the defence, and (2) he can only give evidence if he himself applies to do so.

If the prosecution require the evidence of an accused who is jointly arraigned with other accused persons, he should be released or a separate verdict of 'not guilty' taken against him. An accused so giving evidence is popularly said to turn King's evidence.

Though an accused who is being tried together with other persons is a competent witness for the defence, none of the other persons accused can compel him to give evidence.

If, therefore, an accused thinks that the evidence of one or more of the other persons proposed to be conjointly arraigned will be material to his defence, he should claim a separate trial.

2. *The wife of an accused or of any accused tried jointly with him cannot be called as a witness for the prosecution.*

Husband and wife are not competent to give any evidence tending directly or indirectly to criminate each other, except in those cases where violence or bodily injury inflicted by one or the other is the offence charged, or where the husband or wife prosecutes the other for some offence relating to property, and in a few other cases (Criminal Evidence Act, 3, 4).

The wife of a person charged is a competent witness, but (1) she can only give evidence for the defence (except in the above special cases), and (2) she can only give evidence if her husband applies that she should do so.

Husband and wife can never be compelled to disclose communications between themselves during marriage.

3. *A member of a court-martial or the judge-advocate cannot be a witness for the prosecution (but may be for the defence).*

4. *A person who, in the opinion of the court, is, on account of extreme youth, want of understanding, or other causes, unable to understand the obligations of an oath, or give a rational answer to questions asked him.*

A witness unable to speak or hear is not incompetent, but may give his evidence by writing, or by signs, or in any other manner in which he can make it intelligible, but such writing must be written and such signs made in open court. Evidence so given is deemed to be oral evidence.

*Compellable witnesses.*—It follows that because a person is competent to give evidence, he is therefore compelled to do so. There are many cases in which a witness may decline to answer a question or produce a document.

**232. CREDIBILITY OF WITNESSES.**—The effect of recent enactments has been to draw a distinction between the competency of a witness and his credibility. A convict or an atheist is not disqualified from giving evidence on moral or religious grounds, but his character may be such as to throw grave doubts on the value of his evidence, which must be taken simply for what it is presumably worth.

**233. OATH OF WITNESS.**—Witness before being examined must be duly sworn or permitted to make

a solemn declaration. Where a witness has to give evidence against several accused persons whose cases are being dealt with separately, he must be resworn each time, even although the court remain the same. The usual form of oath and declaration is similar to that used in a civil court. An oath or declaration is administered in such a form and with R. 30 such ceremonies as a witness may deem most solemn and binding. A person desiring to be sworn in the Scotch form will swear the prescribed oath standing and holding up his right hand. Ordinarily a witness, after repeating the oath, kisses the Bible, which is held in his right hand. With a Roman Catholic the book should be closed and have a cross marked on the cover, or he may be sworn on a crucifix. Jews are sworn on the Old Testament with their heads covered. Sikhs may be sworn on the Grünth, and Mahomedans on the Koran. In the case of natives of India it is advisable to follow the practice of the civil courts of the district where the trial is held.

*Refused to be sworn.*—A witness who refuses to be S. 28 sworn, or to give any evidence that may be legally re- S. 126 quired of him, can be punished according to his 189 position, either by a military or civil court.

**234. PROSECUTOR AS WITNESS.**—The prosecutor may 68 be called as a witness either for the defence or the R. 39 prosecution, but it is very undesirable that an officer R. 77 who is likely to be called upon as a witness should be prosecutor.

As the prosecutor is necessarily present during the examination of all witnesses, it is obvious that if called to give evidence for the prosecution he should R. 39 be examined as the first witness. He should not as a rule be required to give evidence except upon some purely formal matter, to prove a date, or to produce documents.

There may arise on active service or in exceptional cases instances where the prosecutor is of necessity a material witness for the prosecution. Care should then be taken that all statements made by him as a witness are kept distinct from any address he may make as a prosecutor.

His evidence as a witness for the prosecution Sm. 571 would necessarily be in a narrative form, as there R. 39 is no one to examine him. He can of course be cross-examined by the accused.

When counsel appears on behalf of the prosecutor 70 the latter is deposed as it were from his position, R. 89 and is subject to examination like any other witness.

The prosecutor is not debarred from giving evi- 120 dence after the finding as to the character and previous convictions of the accused.

**235. MEMBER AS WITNESS.**—It is not advisable to place an officer on a court-martial whose evidence as a witness is likely to be required.

The judge-advocate or any member of a court S. 50 cannot be a witness for the prosecution, but may be R. 77 a witness for the defence. In a recent case the officer who confined a soldier for drunkenness was placed upon the court for his trial. The proceedings were upset on the ground that the officer, though not called upon to give evidence, was practically a witness for the prosecution. A member, if called upon to give evidence, must be sworn like other witnesses in open court and be subject to cross-examination, and does not cease in any respect to be a member of the court.

A member who has or thinks he has any special M. vi 90 knowledge of the guilt or innocence of the accused must not communicate the same privately to other members of the court, or act on private grounds of belief. If he wishes to give evidence he must be sworn as other witnesses.

**236. PROSECUTOR'S WITNESSES.**—The prosecutor is R. 75 not bound to call all the witnesses whose evidence is in the summary or abstract of evidence given to the accused, but the latter has a right to ask that any such witness whom he may desire to cross-examine shall, if practicable, be present.

If a prosecutor calls a witness whose evidence is R. 76 not contained in the summary or abstract, reasonable notice should be given to the accused, and if notice has not been given the accused may demand an adjournment of the court or a postponement of the cross-examination.

As a matter of justice, no witness should be called by the prosecution and examined unless the accused has been previously made acquainted with his name, either by the convening officer or prosecutor.

**237. WITNESSES OF ACCUSED.**—The accused should R. 14 be asked for a list of the witnesses he wishes to call in his defence not less than 18 hours before the assembly of a regimental court-martial and 24 hours before that of any other court, and the convening officer or president is responsible that their attendance is, R. 78 if possible, secured.

If the exigencies of the service do not permit of R. 104 so long a warning being given, a written declaration to that effect must be laid before the court-martial, and as long a time as possible afforded to procure the witnesses.

If the accused desires to call a witness whose R. 77 name he has not given in the list, he is himself responsible for procuring his attendance.

The accused is not bound to inform the prosecutor as to the number or names of the witnesses he intends to call.

An accused person at any stage in the proceedings R. 80 may apply to give evidence himself or have his wife called as a witness, but neither the accused nor his

wife shall be called as a witness except on the application of the accused.

**238. WITNESSES IN COURT.**—After the arraignment of the accused the prosecutor calls his witnesses one by one before the court, and elicits from them the evidence he requires. At the close of the prosecution the witnesses for the defence are similarly called and R. 41 examined. The accused is entitled to give evidence R. 80 himself at any time while the evidence for the defence is being heard, but he should usually give his evidence before any other witnesses for the defence. Unless his violent conduct makes it impossible, he will be treated, while giving evidence, like any other witness, but will remain under escort.

The court may for its own information (at any R. 86 time before the finding), or at the request of the prosecutor or accused person (before the time for the second address of the accused), call or recall M. v 67 a witness or an accused who has given evidence for the purpose of having a question put to him through the president.

Witnesses should not be called or recalled to give any material evidence *after the defence is closed*, as the fact of so doing gives the right of reply, and is liable to cause confusion in the proceedings.

The court ‘would do well to act on the principle that the recall of a witness whom the prosecution and defence have already had full opportunity of O'D. 11 questioning should be distinctly for the satisfaction rather of the court themselves than of either party, and especially not with the object of supplying the omission of a prosecutor to prove a material part of his case.’

Witnesses may be allowed by the court to be called or recalled in special cases by the prosecutor to R. 86 enable him to rebut some new matter unexpectedly M. vi brought forward by the accused or a witness for the 117

defence, or to re-establish the credibility of his witnesses which has been impeached.

Where the accused has called witnesses to character the prosecutor before the time for the second address of the accused may call or recall a witness for the purpose of proving previous convictions or entries in the conduct book against him. R. 86

- 239. EXAMINATION OF WITNESS.**—The examination of a witness by the party calling him is called the *direct examination*, or the *examination in chief*.

*Cross-examination.*—The opposite side have then a right to *cross-examine* the witness in order to test the accuracy or credibility of his evidence, or to shake his credit by impeaching his motives or injuring his character.

*Re-examination.*—At the conclusion of the cross-examination the party producing the witness may 118 re-examine him, but the re-examination must be directed exclusively to the explanation of matters referred to in cross-examination. If new matter is introduced in re-examination by permission of the court the adverse party may further cross-examine on that matter. M. vi

*Separate Examination.*—Each witness is examined R. 81 separately, and witnesses (other than the prosecutor and the accused) while not under examination must be excluded from the court. This rule, however, is not so rigidly observed as to exclude the testimony of those who by inadvertence have been allowed to listen to the examination of others, although their evidence should be received with caution. In order to prevent witnesses being influenced by hearing the charge read they should be ordered out of the court when the prisoner is arraigned. 98

- 240. EXAMINATION IN CHIEF.**—When a witness is 253 being examined in chief all questions put must be

strictly relevant to the points at issue, and he must not be asked leading questions on material points.

*Leading questions.*—A leading question is one suggesting the answer which the person putting the question wishes or expects to receive, or suggesting disputed facts as to which the witness is to testify. Leading questions can nearly always be answered by 'yes' or 'no.'

For example: 'Did you see A strike B at the corner of Park Lane at noon on the 15th instant?' would be a leading question, as it suggests the evidence required, which is that A struck B at a certain place. On the other hand, it might be fairly asked, 'Where were you at noon on the 15th?' 'Did you notice any fighting or assault?' 'Are the persons you saw in fighting now in court?'

*When admissible.*—Leading questions as to points that are not material or merely introductory are generally admitted to save time. For example, a soldier might be asked, 'Were you in No. 1 room on the morning of the 10th instant?' when it is not disputed that he was there.

Leading questions are admissible in order to help a very youthful or unintelligent witness, or to aid the memory. In all such cases the court must use their discretion in allowing the question to be put.

After an ordinary direct examination has failed to elicit distinct replies as to the identification of a person or thing it is permissible to produce such person or object in court, and ask the witness if he can identify him.

When it is apparent that a witness is unwilling to give testimony, and will not answer direct questions, the party producing him may, by permission of the court, treat the witness as a hostile one, and subject him to cross-examination and ask him leading questions. A person who has called a witness is, however, not allowed to shake the credit of his own witness by impeaching his character.

*Refreshing memory.*—A witness may not read his O'D.<sup>9</sup> evidence, but may refresh his memory by referring M. vi to writings made by himself when the transaction 70 was fresh in his memory. He may also refer to writings made by others and read by him and known to be correct within the time aforesaid. Any writings so referred to must be produced, and the witness is liable to cross-examination in respect of them. A witness must swear positively as to the facts recorded, or to his conviction that the record was a truthful one at the time when the transaction was fresh in his memory.

241. **CROSS-EXAMINATION.**—When the examination in M. vi chief is finished, the opposite side can cross-examine 112 the witness. The object of cross-examination is to test the accuracy of the evidence already given in every possible way, or show that the matter in hand may be viewed in a different light. It is not limited to the matter brought forward in the direct examination, but extends over all subjects relevant to the case as a whole. As a rule, cross-examination is directed to discredit the evidence given or the person who has given it, and great latitude is allowed in putting questions.

*Leading questions.*—Leading questions may be put to try to make the witness contradict himself.

*Irrelevant questions.*—Irrelevant questions are ad- M. vi missible in cross-examination, and are used for the 113 purpose of throwing a witness off his guard. Though the questions put need not be relevant to the matter upon which the witness has been examined, they must be relevant to the main issue before the court. It is not allowable to cross-examine on facts which have nothing to do with the case ; or do not tend to shake the credibility of the witness ; nor can it be assumed that fact are proved which have not been proved, or that answers have been given which have not been given.

*Degrading questions.*—Questions may be put to test M. vi the veracity, accuracy, or credibility of a witness, 114 or to shake his credit by injuring his character.

The power of casting imputations on a witness's R. 92 character is, however, somewhat limited before courts-martial. If a counsel asks a question with 103 the intention of injuring the character of a witness and so affecting his credit, and the witness objects to answer, the court should disallow the question if they think that the imputation, if true, would not seriously affect the opinion of the court.

An accused person who gives evidence himself R. 80 cannot be asked questions tending to show that he has been guilty of criminal acts other than those covered by the charge, or is a bad character, unless—

(1) The proof that he has committed such acts is admissible evidence to show that he is guilty of the offence with which he is charged.

(2) He has given evidence of his good character or endeavoured to obtain such evidence from the witnesses for the prosecution, or has cast imputations on the character of the prosecutor or his witnesses.

(3) He has given evidence against any other person charged with the same offence.

*As to previous statements.*—A witness may be asked M. vi whether he has on a previous occasion made a statement 116 relative to the subject-matter of the action, and inconsistent with his present testimony, the circumstances of the supposed statement being referred to sufficiently to designate the particular occasion ; and if he does not admit that he has made such a statement, proof may be given that he did make it.

The previous statement may have been made in Sth. 132 writing, and questions may be asked concerning it without showing the writing in question. If, however, it is intended to contradict the witness's testimony by producing the writing, it must be shown to

the witness before the contradictory proof can be given.

The summary of evidence may be used to show that a certain statement was made which it is proposed to contradict, and evidence may be called to prove that the evidence of a witness, though consistent with the summary, is not consistent with the evidence given by him at the previous investigation before the commanding officer.

**242. QUESTIONING WITNESS.**—The examination of a witness is conducted by means of questions put orally to him by the prosecutor, the accused, or the judge-advocate. R. 83

Exceptions to this rule arise when a prosecutor is himself a witness for the prosecution, and gives his evidence as the first witness in the form of a statement, or when an accused person, undefended by counsel, elects to give evidence. R. 39

The evidence is usually taken down in a narrative form in as nearly as possible the words used, but if the court or any of the parties to the trial think it necessary, each question and answer shall be taken down verbatim. R. 95

The court or either of the parties who do not put the question may raise an objection to it. If objection is made the court should generally order the witness to withdraw until it is decided whether the question may or may not be put. R. 81

At any time before the time for the second address of the accused the judge-advocate or a member of the court may, with the permission of the court, address through the president any question to a witness. As a rule, questions would be put at the close of an examination of a witness, and before another is called. The court should always ask a witness any question which they are requested by the prosecutor or the accused to ask, and does not seem unreasonable. R. 85

*Reply.*—The witness in all cases addresses his reply R. 83 to the court, and must not address the prosecutor or the accused in the second person, as such a mode of address may lead to altercation.

*Correcting evidence.*—The evidence of each witness R. 83 is read out to him after he has finished, and he is M. v 66 asked if it is correct. Any minor alterations are, if necessary, made and verified by the initials of the president, and any material alteration or explanation should be inserted at the end, and not by way of interlineation or erasure. An explanation made by a witness renders him liable to be cross-examined or re-examined with regard to it.

- 243. PRIVILEGE AS TO ANSWERING.**—A witness before a court-martial is in a similar position to one before a civil court, and the court is bound to protect him from insult, or from questions put in a needlessly offensive form. Witnesses who are competent are, however, bound to answer all questions put to them, except in the following cases:—

*Criminating answer.*—No one (except the accused M. vi himself when giving evidence on his own application, and as to the offence wherewith he is charged) 93 is bound to answer a question if the answer thereto would, in the opinion of the court, render the witness (or the witness's husband or wife) liable to be tried on a criminal charge or to military punishment.

The privilege of refusing to answer would not apply M. vi where the answer would render a witness liable 94 merely to a civil suit.

*Degrading answer.*—When a question is not relevant except so far as it affects the credit of a witness 114 by injuring his character, the court can exercise its R. 92 discretion in compelling him to answer, and should refuse to compel a question to be answered unless it appears that the truth of the matter suggested would affect the credibility of the witness as to the matter in issue.

An accused person who produces evidence as to his own character or casts imputations on the character of the prosecutor or his witnesses, or who has given evidence against any other person charged with the same offence, renders himself liable to be cross-examined as to character. It must, however, be remembered that in no case may a question be put to an accused person which would be inadmissible in the case of another witness.

*Professional secrets.*—Legal advisers are not bound M. vi to answer questions as to confidential communications made to them by their clients (information with respect to a contemplated fraud being excepted). Medical men and clergymen are not privileged from disclosure of communications made to them in confidence, but it is not usual to press for disclosures made to clergymen. The expression ‘legal adviser’ includes the person assisting the accused during a trial.

*Official secrets.*—A witness is not bound to answer questions as to official information of a confidential character, or to disclose the unanimity of opinion or otherwise of a court-martial previously held. The R. 124 proceedings of a court of inquiry cannot be called 273 for by courts-martial, nor is any confession or statement made at a court of inquiry admissible against an officer or soldier before a court-martial. The only exception to this rule is in the case of a court-martial held for the trial of an officer or soldier for wilfully giving false evidence before the court of inquiry.

*Husband and wife.*—Husband and wife cannot be forced to disclose communications which one has made to the other during marriage.

Questions, whether answered or not, should be entered on the proceedings. When a witness is not bound to answer a question, the court should inform him of his right not to answer, which the witness can avail himself of or not as he thinks fit.

**244. CONTRADICTION OF ANSWERS.**—When a witness is asked questions which only tend to shake his M. vi credit by injuring his character, the answer must be 115 received whether true or not, and cannot be contradicted, except :

1. When a witness is asked whether he has been previously convicted of a felony or misdemeanour, and denies it or refuses to answer.
2. When he is asked a question tending to show that he is not impartial.
3. Where he has previously made inconsistent 241 statements.
4. Where he can be shown to be a notorious liar.

In the first two cases proof may be given of the truth of the facts suggested. In the last two cases evidence may be produced in support of the contention made.

**245. IMPEACHING CREDIBILITY OF WITNESS.**—The 232 credibility of a witness may be impeached—

1. By producing evidence to contradict him ; but M. vi in such a case the witness, during cross-examination 113 should be made acquainted with the substance of the evidence to be produced.
2. By making him contradict himself.
3. By discrediting his character.
4. By bringing witnesses to swear that they, from M. vi their knowledge of the witness, believe him to be 117 unworthy of credit on oath. The reasons for the belief should not be stated, but may be elicited in cross-examination.

The party, the character of whose witnesses is impeached, may give evidence in reply, to show that the witnesses are worthy of credit.

**246. CONTEMPT OF COURT.**—A witness subject to military law who is guilty of any contempt of court can 228 be tried for *contempt* by a court other than that 233 before which the offence was committed, or, if he S. 28

insults the court or disturbs the proceedings, may be imprisoned by its order under the hand of the president for a term not exceeding twenty-one days. In the case of a soldier he may be sentenced to undergo detention for a similar period.

If a person not subject to military law commits S. 126 contempt of a military court, the president may, S. 180 under his hand, certify the offence to any civil court which has the power of dealing with such an offence, and that court may punish the witnesses in like manner as if he had committed the offence against itself.

## CHAPTER XXV

*EVIDENCE*

**247. INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.** 248. EVIDENCE—Direct—Circumstantial. 249. FACTS NOT REQUIRING PROOF. 250. FACTS REQUIRING PROOF—Substance of Charge—Special Findings. 251. THE BURDEN OF PROOF—Presumption—Of Criminal Intent—Of Theft—Other Presumptions. 252. RULES OF EVIDENCE. 253. RULE OF RELEVANCY—Offences connected together—Facts showing Intention—Facts showing Motive—Cases of Conspiracy—General Disposition—Character. 254. RULE OF BEST EVIDENCE—One Witness sufficient—Secondary Evidence—Depositions—Documentary Evidence—Public Documents—Private Documents. 255. RULE AS TO HEARSAY—Dying Declarations—Statements as part of *res gestae*—Summary of Evidence—Public Documents. 256. RULE AS TO OPINION—How far Admissible—Experts. 257. ADMISSIONS. 258. CONFESSIONS—When Involuntary—When Voluntary—Proof of Facts revealed—Previous Confessions. 259. REMARKS.

**247. INTRODUCTORY REMARKS.**—The rules or laws S. 127 of evidence were originally framed with reference to S. 128 trial by jury, and it is laid down that the rules R. 73 which guide courts-martial in admitting or rejecting evidence should be the same as those used in the ordinary civil courts of criminal or summary jurisdiction.

In trials by jury person unacquainted with law give a verdict as to the matters of fact alleged in the

charge, and the judge pronounces the sentence which is the legal consequence of the verdict.

In trials by court-martial the members of the court form both judge and jury, and have both to decide as to facts and award a sentence.

In order to decide on questions of fact it is necessary for a jury to hear the evidence or testimony upon which the charges are founded, and from which they are proved.

The judge has to assist the jury in coming to a fair decision, provide that the prisoner has no injustice done to him, and prevent time from being wasted by matters irrelevant to the issue tried being entered into. The rules or laws of evidence in accordance with which a judge guides a jury and regulates the manner in which testimony is brought forward are in principle those which must be followed by members of a military court in the reception of evidence.

The exclusion of certain classes of statements from evidence in judicial proceedings has many advantages. *It assists the jury* or court-martial by concentrating their attention on the issue before them and preventing them being bewildered or misled by irrelevant statements. *It secures fair play to the accused*, as it limits the evidence to the specific charge which he comes prepared to meet. *It protects absent persons* against statements affecting their character. And, lastly, *it prevents waste of time* by confining the evidence to the points at issue.

**248. EVIDENCE** is the testimony upon which facts are believed, and consists of—

1. Statements made by witnesses (or by the accused) Sth. 2 in court under legal sanction in relation to matters of fact under inquiry, or *oral* evidence.
2. Documents produced for the inspection of the court, or *documentary* evidence.

In all judicial inquiries the information must be

given on oath, and be liable to be tested by cross-examination.

Evidence may be either *direct* or *indirect*.

*Direct evidence* is the statement of a witness who M. vi testifies as to his having seen or otherwise observed 41 with his senses the facts in question.

*Indirect* or *circumstantial* evidence is testimony as to certain facts from which the facts in question may be inferred or presumed.

Direct evidence is not necessarily better than indirect or circumstantial evidence, the difference between them being one not of *degree*, but of *kind*.

Before deciding upon the difficult question as to what statements or documents are legally admissible as evidence, it is necessary to make clear what has to be proved and who has to prove it.

**249. FACTS NOT REQUIRING PROOF.**—Certain facts M. vi 10 are assumed to be judicially known. It is not necessary to receive proof as to the facts which courts R. 74 are bound judicially to recognise, such as the existence of Acts of Parliament, or military regulations, or to require evidence on matters which an officer may reasonably be expected to know, or on facts which are generally admitted as being beyond controversy.

**250. FACTS REQUIRING PROOF.**—*It is sufficient to M. vi 9 prove the substance of the charge* in connection with the specific offence for which the accused is being tried, and there are usually certain allegations which do not materially affect the validity of the charge. For instance, it may be apparent that there is a trifling error in the names, dates, or places mentioned in the particulars of the charge, or a man may be charged with using insubordinate language, and it may appear that there is some slight discrepancy as to the actual words used. In such cases 221 the court may, before they have begun to examine R. 33

witnesses, refer the matter to the convening officer, R. 44 or may subsequently amend the particulars in question by a special finding. The time of the court need not be taken up in receiving a quantity of evidence on a point which is not material to the actual offence charged.

*Special findings.*—In some cases the proving of the 119 substance of the charge may lead to the accused M. vi 8 being convicted of an offence technically similar or less serious in degree than that with which he is charged. For instance, in a case of murder, the killing of a person is the essence of the charge, but the evidence may go to prove that it was not done ‘wilfully with malice aforethought,’ and the crime is thus reduced to ‘manslaughter.’ Again, in the case of desertion, the substance of the offence is the absence of the man, and hence, if intention not to return is not proved, he can be found guilty of absence without leave.

A man charged with certain offences may be found S. 56 guilty of cognate offences, and a man charged with R. 44 an offence committed under circumstances involving a higher degree of punishment may be found guilty of the same offence under circumstances involving a less degree of punishment.

- 251. THE BURDEN OF PROOF.**—He who affirms a fact must prove it. If a person be charged with drunkenness, it is for the prosecutor to prove that he was drunk, and not for the accused to prove that he was sober.

*Presumptions.*—There are certain rules of law called Sth. 1 *presumptions* which justify a court in drawing a particular inference from a particular fact or evidence, and the existence of these presumptions or affirmations of the law causes the burden of proof to be shifted in some cases from the prosecutor to the accused.

*Presumption of criminal intent.*—When a man commits an unlawful act, it is *presumed* that he meant to do it, and it rests with him to prove that he did not intend to do it. Thus a person is being tried for shooting at a man, which is an unlawful act. The law presumes that he meant to kill him, and it is for the accused to prove that the death arose from accident or in self-defence.

When an act, which is not in itself unlawful, leads to the commission of an offence, it will rest with the prosecution to prove the intention to commit the offence. For example, a soldier is at target practice, which is a lawful act, and his bullet strikes a bystander near the target. It will be for the prosecution to show that the soldier fired with intent to kill, or was culpably negligent in not taking sufficient precaution.

*Presumption of theft.*—Again, a quantity of property known to have been stolen is found in a person's house. A guilty knowledge concerning the theft is presumed, and it rests with the receiver to prove that the articles were innocently received.

*Other presumptions.*—There are many other presumptions, of which the principal are—

1. That every man is innocent till the contrary is proved.
2. That all necessary things have been done; for instance, on the trial of a soldier it is presumed that he has been attested.
3. That everyone is acquainted with the law. Ignorance is no excuse. When an order is issued, it is presumed that it has been made known to all whom it directly concerns.
4. When an action is done which is injurious to another, *malice* is presumed.
5. A child born in wedlock is presumed to be legitimate.
6. A letter properly addressed and posted is deemed to have been received.

7. A person who has not been heard of for seven years is presumed to be dead.

When a presumption exists, it will rest with the party who denies the facts to prove that the presumption is not correct.

- 252. RULES OF EVIDENCE.**—There are many rules or **M. vi 15** maxims of evidence which are mainly of a negative character, and lay down the sort of evidence which must be excluded from consideration. Of these the principal are—

I. Nothing shall be admitted as evidence which does not tend either directly or indirectly to prove or disprove the charge, or (in other words) the evidence must be confined to the points at issue.

II. The best evidence must be produced which the nature of the case admits of.

III. Hearsay is not evidence.

IV. Opinion is not evidence.

- 253. RULE OF RELEVANCY.**—*Nothing shall be admitted M. vi 16 as evidence which does not tend either directly or indirectly to prove or disprove the charge, or (in other words) the evidence must be confined to the points at issue.* The points or facts at issue are those affirmed by one side and denied by the other, and the evidence must be relevant to the facts at issue. There is considerable difficulty in drawing the line between ‘relevant’ and ‘irrelevant’ facts, as matters apparently unconnected with the charge may indirectly bear upon it.

Evidence which does not directly bear on the charge is relevant in the following cases :—

*Offences connected together.*—When several offences **M. vi 21** are connected with each other so that they form part of one transaction, evidence of one offence is admissible in proof of another. When a person is charged with a specific offence, any evidence as to

other offences must only be entered into sufficiently to prove some part of the charge and no more.

In a charge for stealing certain articles it is not necessary to inquire into the stealing of goods not mentioned in the charge, but evidence might be taken to show that goods stolen from adjoining premises the same night were found in the possession of the accused, as it would afford a strong proof that he was at or near the premises mentioned in the charge. Again, in the case of a person being tried for setting a house on fire, evidence might be received that articles belonging to the house were found to be secreted in his possession.

On a charge of desertion it may be admissible to inquire into the *fact* (but not the attendant circumstances) of a highway robbery which had been committed by the accused, on the night on which he absented himself, and for which he had been tried and convicted by a civil court, or evidence may be received as to the accused selling his uniform, buying plain clothes, etc., in order to show that the commission of such offences proved that he had the intention of leaving the service.

*Facts showing intention.*—Facts showing the intention or state of mind of the accused are generally admissible, provided they do not refer to his general character or disposition, but are strictly confined to the matters mentioned in the charge. M. vi 22

A is being tried by a civil court for the murder of B. Evidence could not be received that A had previously murdered C or other persons, but a former attempt to murder B might be brought forward as proving an intention to murder him.

In support of a charge for disrespectful language the prosecutor, to show the spirit and intention of the accused, after having proved the words in the charge, may prove also that he used disrespectful words on the same subject, either before or after-

wards. This evidence is admissible, not in aggravation of the crime charged, but for the purpose of proving that the disrespect imputed in the charge was wilful and deliberate. The accused, on the other hand, may produce evidence to show that he had been provoked to act as he did by the conduct of the superior towards him.

*Facts showing motive.*—Evidence showing the motive M. vi 25 of the accused or suspicious conduct after committing a crime is admissible. For instance, in a case of burglary, it might be proved that the accused absconded, or that he had hidden the tools with which he had committed the offence.

When a person is tried for murder, evidence might be received that he held a policy of insurance on the murdered person's life.

*Cases of conspiracy.*—In cases of conspiracy the M. vi 26 acts, statements, or writings of any one of the conspirators in furtherance of the common purpose can be brought in evidence against the other conspirators. A statement made by one conspirator which is merely a relation or narrative of some event forming part of the conspiracy, but is not in itself part of the conspiracy, falls within the rule of hearsay, and is not admissible as evidence against another conspirator unless made in his presence.

In the following cases evidence is not admissible :—

*As to general disposition.*—Evidence as to the general M. vi 20 disposition or tendency of the accused to commit a crime is not admissible. In cases of insubordination it would not be right to prove that the accused had been previously insubordinate on other occasions for the purpose of showing a tendency to insubordinate conduct.

Courts-martial have generally, in cases of drunkenness, to receive evidence of previous instances, but this is done for a certain purpose, and must not in-

fluence the court in finding a man guilty of the particular act charged.

*As to character.*—A man must not be convicted of Sth. 56 an offence because he has a bad name. The prosecution cannot, therefore, give evidence as to character as showing the guilt of the accused. If, however, an accused person gives evidence himself or calls witnesses as to his good character, the prosecutor may test the evidence by means of cross-examination, and may prove the fact of there being previous convictions against him. The accused can always bring evidence in favour of his general good character, which the court must weigh in proportion to its relevancy to the crime with which he is charged. Such evidence cannot avail against evidence of facts, but where some reasonable doubt exists as to his guilt, it may tend to strengthen a presumption of innocence.

**254. RULE OF BEST EVIDENCE.**—*The best evidence must be produced which the nature of the case admits of.*—The meaning of this rule is that no evidence shall be admitted which leaves ground for supposing that other and better evidence remains behind in the possession or power of the party producing it.

From the circumstances under which crimes are committed it follows that direct evidence of their commission is rarely obtainable, and that in the great majority of cases reliance must be placed on circumstantial evidence. In admitting the latter it is useful to remember that the ‘facts on which it is sought to found the inference of guilt must be visibly and evidently connected with the crime.’ Before a court finds a person guilty on circumstantial evidence it must be satisfied not only that the circumstances are consistent with the accused having committed the act, but that they are inconsistent with

any other rational conclusion than that the accused was the guilty person.

The law lays down that the evidence shall be the best, but does not define the amount to be received.

*One witness sufficient.*—To prove a fact the evidence of one credible witness (except in cases of treason, treason-felony, and perjury) is enough, provided that it satisfies the court. If a soldier struck an officer on parade, the evidence of one or more men who actually saw the blow would be the *best* evidence, and the testimony of the remainder of the soldiers on parade it would be unnecessary to receive.

The evidence of an accomplice is admissible against his principal, and *vice versa*. But if an accused person has given evidence himself and his evidence tends to criminate another person charged with the same offence, that other person can cross-examine him as to character.

The evidence of a single accomplice is in law sufficient for a conviction, but it is the practice to require it to be confirmed by unimpeachable testimony in some material part.

*Secondary evidence.*—When the best legal evidence is proved to the court to be unattainable, then, and then only, is the next best or *secondary* evidence admissible.

The deposition on oath of a witness could not therefore be received unless the attendance of the witness himself has been proved to be physically impossible.

Special provision is made by statute for the reception of the evidence of a material witness who has given evidence at a preliminary inquiry and cannot attend at the trial.

In such a case the *deposition* or the duly attested written statement of a witness who is unable to attend from death or illness, and who gave the statement on oath in the presence of a justice and of the

accused person, who had an opportunity of cross-examining him, is admissible when a court-martial is trying civil offences under S. 41.

Depositions are not as a rule received by courts-martial, but military courts have the power, not possessed by civil ones, of adjourning to the abode of a sick person. R. 65

*Documentary evidence.*—There is little difficulty in M. vi 31 applying the rule as to the best evidence, except in the case of documentary evidence. The sub-rules to be followed are—(1) that a verbal account of the contents of a document can never be received if the document itself is obtainable; (2) that, subject to certain exceptions, a copy of a document is not admissible when the original document can be produced. The rule as to the admissibility of a copy of a document is applied much more strictly to private than to public or official documents.

*Public documents.*—Public documents are held to be M. vi 37 the acts of public functionaries in the execution of their business, and are receivable as such by virtue of Parliamentary statutes. They include Acts of Parliament, Acts of foreign or colonial States, proclamations or orders of the Crown, judgments of courts, official and public records, documents of corporations and companies, bye-laws, entries in registers, and other books of a public nature.

Primary evidence of a public document may be given by producing the document from proper custody, and by a witness identifying it as being what it professes to be. Public documents may also always be proved by secondary evidence, which would usually take the form of a printed copy or a written copy or extract duly certified by a proper official. S. 163

Special provision is made in the Army Act for proving by means of copies or certified extracts the contents of the following documents :—

1. Papers in reference to attestation and enlistment. S. 163

2. Papers in reference to a man's service or discharge.
3. Army lists, Royal warrants, Army orders, King's regulations, and official rules and regulations and gazettes printed by Government.
4. Notices addressed to Army Reserve men. R.F.A.
5. Descriptive returns. 24
6. Proceedings of courts-martial. S. 165
7. Certificates of civil convictions. S. 164
8. Records in the ordinary regimental books, which include the declaration of court of inquiry on illegal absence, and confession of desertion and fraudulent enlistment. S. 72 S. 73 281

With the exception of the Army Lists, gazettes, etc., referred to in (3) none of the above documents should be received in evidence by a court-martial unless they are properly 'put in' by a person who has been duly sworn.

*Private documents.*—Private documents are all letters, official or private, private accounts, receipts, etc., and any papers which do not come under the head of public documents.

Documents, other than public documents or documents for the proof of which special provision has been made by statute, are not admissible as evidence of the facts they relate, but may be brought forward for other purposes. 255

As a rule affidavits, statements by recruiting officers, police constables, postmasters, etc., are inadmissible, but documents made by the accused or under his sanction or with his privity may be received.

When private writings are brought before a court, the originals must be produced for inspection (primary evidence) and the handwriting, if not admitted, must be proved.

Secondary evidence of the contents of a private M vi 35 document may be given in the following cases :—

(a) Where the original is in possession of the adverse party, and he, having been served with notice to produce it, does not do so.

(b) Where the original is in court, but in possession of a witness who is not legally bound to produce it, and refuses to do so.

(c) Where there is good reason to believe the original is lost or destroyed.

(d) Where the original is from nature, bulk or locality unable to be removed or procured.

(e) Where the original is a document for the proof of which special provision has been made by the statute.

Secondary evidence of a private document is usually given by producing a copy and calling a witness who can prove the copy to be correct, or where no copy is obtainable by calling a witness who has seen the document and can give an account of its contents.

**255. HEARSAY IS NOT EVIDENCE.**—Hearsay evidence M. vi 46 means the statements, whether in writing or not, made in the absence of the accused by persons not called as witnesses, and who, therefore, are not on their oath nor liable to cross-examination.

This rule does not exclude statements made in the presence of the accused, but evidence of any such M. vi 48 statement, although admissible as showing his conduct when he heard the statement, is not evidence that the statement was true. Evidence that A. B. said to the accused, ‘ You stole C.’s watch,’ is admissible to show the conduct of the accused on hearing the accusation, but is not evidence to prove that he did in fact steal the watch as alleged.

The term ‘hearsay’ is primarily applicable to what a witness has heard another person (not before the court) say with respect to the facts in dispute.

The statement of a person who is not called as a witness is none the less ‘hearsay’ because it has been reduced to writing and is offered in that form to the court. Documents, other than public documents or those for the proof of the contents of which special provision has been made by statute, cannot therefore be admitted as evidence of the facts they relate. A copy of a marriage register, which is a public document, is, if duly attested, a proof of a marriage, but a letter from a clergyman stating that he had solemnised a marriage, or from a person stating that he had inspected the register, could not be accepted as evidence.

The rule as to the exclusion of hearsay evidence is subject to the following exceptions :

1. *Dying declarations*.—In trials for murder and M. vi 49 manslaughter a declaration made by the person killed *as to the cause of his death*, or as to any of the circumstances of the transaction that resulted in his death, is admissible, provided it be proved that he fully believed he was in actual danger of death, and had given up all hope of recovery.

2. *Declaration made by a deceased person against his interest*.—The statements made by a person since deceased against his pecuniary or proprietary interest, whether written or oral, is admissible. M. vi 55

3. *Statements as part of res gestæ*.—Res gestæ are Sth. 11 the acts or transactions which are the subject of investigation. Where statements are so immediately connected with an offence as to be considered virtually a part of the res gestæ, or the immediate and natural effect of them, they are admissible even if made in the absence of the accused.

Statements showing the bodily or mental condition of a person, provided they are relevant to the issue, are admissible, e.g., in a poisoning case statements M. vi 54 made by the deceased before his illness as to his state of health and during his illness as to his symptoms, were admitted as evidence.

In trials for rape, evidence is allowed to be given M. vi 53 as to the fact that a complaint had been made shortly after the offence was committed and as to the particular terms of the complaint so far as they relate to the charge.

*4. Statements made by a deceased person in the strict course of business.*—Statements or writings with reference to the charge, made by a deceased person in the ordinary course of professional business, would be admitted. Where a letter had been destroyed, a copy taken by a deceased clerk in the usual letter-book would be evidence of its contents.

Private writings may be used to prove the motive or intention of the accused, or may be admitted as proof of a document having been written when writing the document is the essence of the charge. For example, the best evidence of having written an insubordinate letter is the letter itself.

*The summary of evidence* which is of the nature of M. vi 58 a private writing cannot be admitted as evidence of the facts therein contained except where the accused has pleaded guilty. It may, however, be used to show that a witness has made a particular statement or has contradicted himself. The summary of evidence cannot otherwise be used as evidence, and R. 17 as a court is liable to be biassed by statements in it, it is usually expedient that no one but the president should refer to it.

Any statement (but not the evidence) of the M. vi 81 accused contained in the summary of the evidence 258 (being of the nature of a voluntary confession) is, however, usually read to the court as evidence, whether it be in his favour or not. The summary of evidence of a witness who is not before the court cannot, of course, be referred to.

*Public and official documents.*—The rule as to M. vi 60 'hearsay' evidence is also subject to important qualifications in its application to public and official documents. Certain public documents, such as Acts

of Parliament, Proclamations and Orders of the Crown, official books, records and registers, etc., are made by statute evidence of the facts to which they relate.

Similarly, under the special provisions of the Army **M. vi 62** Act, attestation papers, letters and documents respecting service, Army lists, gazettes, warrants and orders made in pursuance of the Act, records in regimental books, descriptive returns and certificates of conviction and acquittal are made evidence of the facts stated by them.

**256. OPINION IS NOT EVIDENCE.**—The general rule **M. vi 63** is that the opinion or belief of a witness as to the facts in issue is not admissible in evidence. For instance, in a case of desertion the evidence of a witness would be taken as to the facts of illegal absence, etc., but the *opinion* of the witness that the accused had deserted would not be received, as that is an inference to be determined by the court.

*How far admissible.*—This rule does not include **M. vi 68** evidence which from its nature cannot always be sworn to positively. Thus, for instance, a witness may swear as to the identity of a person or thing *to the best of his belief.*

Similarly, opinion can be received as to the conduct of an accused person, or his deportment or language in reference to facts beyond the knowledge of the court. A witness might testify that he saw the accused at a certain time, and that in his opinion he was drunk.

When facts cannot be sworn to positively, a witness who falsely swears he ‘thinks’ or ‘believes’ some fact is true is liable to be convicted of perjury.

*Experts.*—The principal exception to this rule as **M. vi 64** to opinion is the opinion of an expert, which can be received on any point within the range of his special knowledge. In a poisoning case a doctor may give

his opinion that a certain poison produces certain symptoms, but he could not give his opinion that the death in question was accompanied by those symptoms unless he perceived them himself as an ordinary witness.

An officer may be asked, as an expert, to give his M. vi 66 opinion on a point within his special military knowledge, but to make his opinion admissible, his knowledge must be of a kind not possessed by the court generally.

The opinion of an expert in handwriting, or a Sth. 51 person acquainted with a particular handwriting, may be received.

**257. ADMISSIONS.**—It is the practice to allow either M. vi 72 party the option of admitting in open court the authenticity of orders or letters, or the signature of a document, or the truth of a copy in cases where the original writing is receivable when proved, or that certain items in an enumeration of stores or in an account are correctly stated, or that a promise or order was actually given, or a certain letter sent and received, or in other similar cases where admissions may expedite the proceedings, and do not go into the merits of the matter before the court.

In criminal proceedings, admissions by the accused of matters relating to an alleged offence, as distinguished from actual confession of the offence itself, are, strictly speaking, not receivable as evidence. This does not extend to acts done or things said by the prisoner as part of the *res gestæ*, which, until explained by him, raise a presumption of guilt. A letter by a person charged with an offence apologising for the offence, would ordinarily be a confession; but a letter admitting some of the facts alleged, but explaining them so as to show there was no criminality in them, would ordinarily not amount to a confession.

**258. CONFESSIONS.**—Confessions, *if voluntary*, are M. vi 73 deemed to be relevant, but, as a general rule, only against the persons who make them.

If any part of a confession is given in evidence, M. vi 80 the whole must be received, and not merely the portion disadvantageous to the accused.

A confession made by one accomplice in the presence of another is admissible against the latter to this extent, that, if it implicates him, his silence under the charge may be used against him, whilst on the other hand his prompt repudiation of the charge might tell in his favour.

*When involuntary.*—No confession is deemed to be Sth. 22 voluntary if it appears to have been caused by any M. vi 75 threat, inducement, or promise proceeding from a person *in authority*, and if in the opinion of the court such threat, inducement or promise gave the accused person reasonable grounds for supposing that he would gain some advantage in reference to the proceedings against him.

The inducement must have some reference to the escape of the accused from the charge made against him, and must be made by a person who has some power in relieving him either wholly or partially from the consequences of the charge, such as a constable, magistrate, prosecutor, and in some cases the person against whom the offence was committed.

*When voluntary.*—A confession made in consequence M. vi 76 of inducements held out by persons not in authority, or caused by religious exhortation, or by inducements which have no reference to the escape of the accused from the charge, are deemed voluntary. Thus a gaoler, who is a person in authority, states to a person in custody that a pardon has been promised to anyone who confesses. The confession made in consequence is deemed involuntary and cannot be received. If, however, the gaoler promises the same person that he will allow him to

see his wife if he confesses, the confession is voluntary.

A confession is not inadmissible because it was M. vi 79 made under promise of secrecy, or in consequence of deception, but a court-martial would seldom receive any confession obtained by fraud, though they might legally do so.

*Proof of facts revealed.*—Although an involuntary M. vi 78 confession cannot be received in evidence, yet if such confession reveals a certain fact, that fact can be proved. For example, a person accused of burglary makes a confession to a policeman under circumstances which prevents it being received. In it he states that he threw a lantern into a pond. The fact that he said so, and that the lantern was found in the pond, may be proved. Sth. 22

*Previous confessions.*—Evidence in the nature of a M. vi 81 confession given in previous proceedings may be used against the person who gave it. Thus a statement of a soldier to his commanding officer acknowledging an offence might be received in evidence at a subsequent trial. 255

The proceedings of a court of inquiry, or any confession or statement made before such court, cannot, however, be used as evidence against an officer or soldier before a court-martial unless the offence of wilfully giving false evidence before the Court of Inquiry is the subject of trial. R. 124

**259. REMARKS.**—The rules of evidence to be followed by S. 128 courts-martial are to be those adopted in courts of ordinary criminal jurisdiction. Fortunately, in cases dealt with by court-martial there are generally but few witnesses and the issue to be tried is simple and clear. The main principles to be remembered may be summed up as follows :—

1. The evidence must be relevant to the issue, and the best procurable.

2. It must not be in the nature of hearsay or opinion.
3. Confessions, admissions, or documents must be legally admissible, and the latter should be verified and properly 'put in' by a person who has been duly sworn.
4. The witnesses must be legally competent, and their examination properly conducted.

## CHAPTER XXVI

*FIELD GENERAL COURTS-MARTIAL*

260. FIELD GENERAL COURTS - MARTIAL—Provost-Marshals. 261. CONVENING OF COURT. 262. COMPOSITION OF COURT. 263. GENERAL PROCEDURE. 264. CHALLENGE. 265. SWEARING COURT. 266. CHARGE. 267. PLEA. 268. EVIDENCE. 269. FINDING. 270. SENTENCE. 271. CONFIRMATION. 272. GENERAL PROVISIONS.

280. FIELD GENERAL COURT-MARTIAL.—On the S. 49 consolidation of the Mutiny Act and Articles of War R. 105 in one statute in 1879 field general courts-martial were authorised to be formed in order to replace the detachment general courts-martial, which were constituted (originally in the Peninsular War) to deal with offences of pillage and outrage committed by persons subject to military law against the inhabitants of a country beyond the seas in which a military force was serving.

At the same time summary courts-martial were instituted to try all offences committed by persons subject to military law *on active service*, which, with due regard to the public service, could not be tried by an ordinary court-martial.

In 1893 summary courts-martial were abolished, and the power of the field general courts-martial was extended, so as to deal with all offences committed on active service, subject to slight modifications as to the convening of the courts and the confirming of the sentences.

*Provost-Marshals.*—‘By the custom of British S. 74

armies the provost has been in the habit of punishing on the spot, even with death, under the orders of the Commander-in-Chief, soldiers found in the act of disobedience of orders, of plunder, or of outrage.' Provost-marshals cannot now inflict any punishment on their own authority, but are purely executive officers who arrest and detain offenders and carry out sentences of court-martial. For the prompt repression of all offences that may be committed *abroad* these officials may be appointed by a general in command, and, when on active service, they have important duties to perform in connection with the maintenance of good order in the force. As respects soldiers in their custody undergoing field punishment, they have the same powers as the Governor of a military prison. The provost-marshall at a permanent military camp in the United Kingdom is the commanding officer of the military police corps.

K. 599

**261. CONVENING OF COURT.—A field general court- S. 49  
martial—may be convened— R. 105**

(1) By an officer in command of a detachment in any country beyond the seas when *not on active service*, where complaint has been made to him that offences have been committed by persons *under his command* against the property or persons of the inhabitants of such country.

(2) By the commanding officer, or officer in immediate command of a body of troops *on active service* for the trial of offences committed by persons subject to military law.

In the first case the convening officer should have been authorised to convene field general courts-martial by the general officer in command of the forces to which he belongs. In both cases satisfactory assurances must be obtained that it is not practicable to try the offender by an ordinary general court-martial and—where the convening officer

is not a commanding officer or is below the rank of field officer—that it is not practicable to delay the trial for reference to a superior officer.

- 262. COMPOSITION OF COURT.**—The court must consist of not less than three officers, unless the convening officer is of opinion that three officers are not available, and that delay is not practicable, in which case two may be appointed. The convening officer may, if other officers are not available, appoint himself president. If practicable, the president should not be below the rank of field officer, and the members should not have less than one year's service, but officers of not less than three years' service, if available, should be appointed. A provost-marshal, assistant provost-marshal, prosecutor, or witness for the prosecution, cannot sit on the court.
- 263. GENERAL PROCEDURE.**—The form of proceedings as laid down for field general courts-martial should be adhered to as closely as possible. It will be noticed that these proceedings consist merely of a formal order convening the court, a certificate from the president that the trial was duly carried out, and a formal confirmation. In a schedule is inserted the name of the offender, the offence charged, the plea, finding, sentence, and confirmation.

If military exigencies in the opinion of the convening officer do not admit of the above simple form being used, the court may be convened and the proceedings carried out without any writing. The provost-marshal, however, if present, and if there is not one, both the president and the officer charged with promulgation must keep a record, adhering as far as possible to the official form; and in it must be noted *at least* the name (or, if the name is not known, the description) of the offender, the offence charged, the finding, sentence, and confirmation, and any recommendation to mercy.

In all cases when military or other exigencies prevent compliance with R. 106, or the use of the form in App. II., a special report must be made to the officer who, if a field general court-martial had not been convened, would have had power to convene a general court-martial to try the offender.

The court may be sworn to try any number of R. 109 offenders, but each accused is tried separately, except in the case of offences committed collectively.

The court is an open one, and the parties to the trial are brought before it in the usual way.

- 264. CHALLENGE.**—The name of the officers composing R. 110 the court are read over in the hearing of the accused, and he is asked if he objects to be tried by any of them.

If *any member* of the court thinks that an objection raised by the accused is reasonable, steps must be taken to constitute a court composed of officers against whom he has no reasonable objection.

- 265. SWEARING COURT.**—The president and members R. 111 and interpreter (if any) are duly sworn in the pre- R. 115 scribed manner, or, if there is a sincere objection to take an oath, are allowed to make a solemn declaration to the same effect.

- 266. CHARGE.**—The charge which should briefly disclose R. 108 an offence under the Army Act is read out to the R. 112 accused by the president, who will give, if necessary, a full explanation as to the exact act or omission charged, and will ask the accused whether he is guilty or not of the offence.

- 267. PLEA.**—The accused on being asked to plead can R. 113 either plead ‘guilty’ or ‘not guilty’ or offer a special plea against the jurisdiction of the court or

in bar of trial. If the special plea is considered by the court to be valid they must report the fact at once to the convening officer.

- 268. EVIDENCE.**—The witnesses for the prosecution will be called, and the accused will be allowed to cross-examine them and give evidence himself or call any available witnesses in his defence. An oath or solemn declaration shall be administered to every witness. A summary of the evidence will be taken down in writing and attached to the proceedings whenever the circumstances of the trial admit of it.

The accused will be asked what he has to say in his defence, and shall be allowed to make his defence.

- 269. FINDING.**—In the case of an equality of votes the accused is acquitted. A finding of acquittal requires no confirmation ; and if it refers to all the offences with which the accused is charged he is at once released from custody.

- 270. SENTENCE.**—The court, if consisting of three or more officers, may award any sentence which a general court-martial can award ; but if the court pass sentence of death the whole court must concur.

The court, if consisting of two officers, may award any sentence authorised for the offence, not exceeding field punishment or two years' imprisonment.

*Recommendation to mercy.*—Any recommendation to mercy must be entered in the schedule, and if necessary a memorandum on the subject may be attached to the proceedings.

- 271. CONFIRMATION.**—Except in the case of acquittal no finding or sentence is valid until it is duly confirmed.

A provost-marshall or an assistant provost-marshall or a prosecutor can in no case confirm the proceedings.

A member of the court cannot confirm its proceedings, unless it is not practicable to delay the case for reference, in which case he may confirm provided he is a person otherwise qualified to do so.

Where a court is convened beyond the seas, and *not on active service*, the proceedings must be confirmed by an officer authorised to confirm the proceedings of general courts-martial.

Where a court is convened *on active service*, the proceedings will be confirmed by the senior officer on the spot, if of field rank, and, if he is not of field rank, by the nearest available field officer.

Where a sentence of death, penal servitude, imprisonment or detention is confirmed, the proceedings are to be transmitted to the officer in chief command of the forces in the field, and a sentence of death or penal servitude shall not be carried into effect pending his decision. When, by reason of distance or the operations of the enemy, such reference is impracticable, the general or field officer commanding the force with which the accused is present, is empowered to give a decision.

No reference is necessary when the punishment awarded, by commutation or otherwise, is less than detention, but a confirming officer may if he thinks it desirable reserve any finding or sentence for confirmation by superior authority.

*Revision.*—The confirming officer cannot send back R. 120 the finding and sentence for revision more than once, nor recommend the increase of a sentence, and on revision the court cannot take any fresh evidence or increase the sentence.

- 272. GENERAL PROVISIONS.—*Voting.***—After the Court R. 117 is sworn, with the exception of the finding and a R. 118 sentence of death, which are specially provided for, every question is determined by a majority of votes, and in the case of equality the president has a casting vote.

*Remand of accused.*—If after the commencement of R. 119 the trial the court are of opinion that a prisoner should be tried by an ordinary court-martial, they should strike his name out of the schedule and remand him.

*Remarks.*—The proceedings shall be held in open R. 119 court in the presence of the accused, except on any R. 121 deliberation among the members when the court may be closed.

The court may adjourn from time to time, and may, if necessary, view any place. The rules as to mitigation of sentence, confirmation notwithstanding informality, transmission and preservation of proceedings, payment for copies of proceedings and loss of proceedings, shall be in accordance as far as practicable with those governing district courts-martial.

## CHAPTER XXVII.

*COURTS OF INQUIRY*

273. COURTS OF INQUIRY—Composition—Procedure  
—Inquiry affecting Character—Inquiry respecting Stores—Inquiry as to Injuries—Inquiry on Prisoners of War. 274. COURT ON ILLEGAL ABSENCE. 275. COURTS OF INQUEST. 276. BOARDS.

273. A COURT OF INQUIRY may be assembled by order R. 124 of the Army Council or by the officer in command K. 666 of any body of troops, whether belonging to one or more corps, to assist him in arriving at a correct conclusion on any subject on which it may be expedient for him to be thoroughly informed; it is directed to collect evidence and, if so required, to report on any transaction into which the convening officer cannot conveniently himself make inquiry. Notice of the time and place of the meeting of the court should be given to all persons concerned in the inquiry, but a court of inquiry has no power to compel civilian witnesses to attend.

*Composition.*—The court may be composed of any number of officers of any rank and of any branch or department of the service, according to the nature of the investigation. Three members, the senior acting as president, will, in ordinary cases, be sufficient. The officer assembling a court of inquiry, committee, or board will appoint a president by name, or, failing such an appointment, the senior member will preside. When the convening officer has so appointed a president, no officer senior in rank to the

president will be detailed to serve as a member of the court of inquiry, committee, or board.

A court of inquiry on loss, damage, or deficiency K. 670 exceeding 50*l.* in respect of public stores and buildings will, if possible, be composed of officers not belonging to the unit or department concerned.

Members of a court of inquiry in a case which is R. 19 subsequently the subject of a court-martial are not to be detailed as members of the court-martial.

*Procedure.*—The members of the court will not R. 124 themselves be sworn, nor will they take evidence on oath except in the case of a court of inquiry on recovered prisoners of war, or in cases where the convening officer directs that the evidence shall be so taken. The court will be guided by the written instructions of the convening officer, who must state the general character of the information to be obtained and whether a report is required. It is the duty of the court to test the accuracy of the evidence of witnesses, and take the necessary measures for eliciting the truth. The court will give no opinion on the conduct of any officer or soldier (except in the case of returned prisoners of war) unless so directed by the convening officer. The proceedings are signed by all the members, and if any member differs from the others he can record his opinion separately. The proceedings are forwarded on completion to the convening officer.

The report made by a court is a privileged communication, and cannot be made the subject of a M. vi 98 civil action, and the proceedings of a court of inquiry M. viii 77 or any confession, statement or answer given in the R. 124 course of the proceedings is not admissible in evidence against an officer or soldier, except when the offence of wilfully giving false evidence before the court of inquiry is the subject of trial.

An officer or soldier who is tried by court-martial in respect of any matter which has been reported on

by a court of inquiry shall be entitled to a copy of the proceedings and report of the court.

*Inquiry affecting character.*—When an inquiry R. 124 affects the character or military reputation of an officer or soldier he must be afforded an opportunity of being present, and of giving evidence or making any statement he may wish, and be permitted to cross-examine witnesses and to produce witnesses in defence of his character or military reputation.

An officer or soldier whose conduct is the subject of investigation cannot refuse to attend a court of inquiry if duly ordered to do so, but he may decline to answer any questions or take any part in the proceedings.

An officer or soldier whose character or military reputation is, in the opinion of the Army Council, affected by the evidence or report of a court of inquiry, shall (unless the Army Council sees reason to order otherwise) be entitled to a copy of the proceedings of the court.

*Inquiry respecting stores.*—All losses or cost of structural repairs exceeding 50*l.* in value in respect of public stores or Government buildings are investigated by a court of inquiry. The G.O.C., after considering the finding of the court, will, according to the circumstances of the case, either apply to the War Office for instructions, deal with the person responsible for the loss to the extent of his powers, or forward a recommendation as to how the loss should be made good and the person responsible for it treated.

*Inquiry as to injuries.*—In the case of a soldier K. 674 becoming seriously maimed or injured (except by wounds received in action), or where there is a doubt as to the cause of the injury or the circumstances under which it was received, a court of inquiry will be held. The court will not give any opinion, but the soldier's commanding officer will

K. 670

App.

xxii

formally record his opinion on the evidence, and forward the proceedings to the brigade-commander for confirmation. The fact of the court having been held will be noted in the man's medical history sheet, and the proceedings will be attached to the soldier's original attestation.

*Inquiry on prisoners of war.*—Whenever officers or K. 675 soldiers are taken prisoners by an enemy a court of inquiry will be assembled to inquire into the conduct of the senior officer or soldier of the party, and, if considered necessary by the G.O.C., into the conduct of any other officers and soldiers of the party. The court will be held as soon as possible after the return of the prisoners.

The members of the court will make a declaration that they will impartially inquire into the circumstances of the case, and the evidence produced will be taken on oath.

The convening officer will direct the court to record their opinion whether the officer or soldier was taken prisoner by reason of the chances of war or through neglect or misconduct on his part, and the convening officer will record his own opinion.

When an opinion adverse to the character or military reputation of an officer or soldier is formed by the officer who determines the case, the adverse opinion shall be communicated to the officer or soldier concerned.

**274. COURT ON ILLEGAL ABSENCE.**—A court of inquiry for the purpose of declaring the illegal absence R. 125 of a soldier will be held in all cases (except in those K. 673 of absconded recruits) at the expiration of twenty-one days after the date of the absence, or as soon after as is practicable, unless the soldier, although still illegally absent, has been taken into custody.

The court is usually composed of three officers, who, although not themselves sworn, are empowered

to require the attendance of witnesses and examine them on oath.

The evidence is taken down in writing, and at the end of the proceedings the court is required to declare the fact of the man's absence, and any deficiencies of arms, ammunition, equipments, instruments, regimental necessaries, or clothing that are proved to have been in the absentee's possession at the date when he absented himself. The proceedings should be signed by all the members.

A copy of the declaration of the court, counter- K. 1909  
signed by the commanding officer is to be entered in a special regimental book (A.F.B. 116), and the R. 125  
original proceedings will then be destroyed. The S. 163  
record thus made, or a duly attested copy thereof, is admissible as evidence of the facts therein contained if the soldier is afterwards brought to trial; and, if he is not apprehended, has the legal effect of a conviction S. 72  
by court-martial for desertion.

A court of this description is held when men of R.F.A.  
the Territorial and Reserve Forces absent themselves 19  
without leave while subject to military law. T.F.A.24

**275. COURTS OF INQUEST** are held by the military S. 133  
authorities on all occasions of death accompanied R. 127  
by violence or suspicious circumstances which occur in military prisons or detention barracks in India, when there is no civil authority competent to hold an inquest.

**276. BOARDS.**—Committees and Boards differ only from K. 676  
Courts of Inquiry in so far that the objects for which they are assembled should not involve any point of discipline. They will follow, as far as may be convenient, the rules for courts of inquiry, but are in no way bound by them. Boards are usually convened to inspect transports, report on barrack damages and inquire into the cause of fires, inspect libraries and canteens, etc.

## CHAPTER XXVIII

*MARTIAL LAW AND CUSTOMS OF WAR.*

277. **MARTIAL LAW**—In the Home Territory—As part of the Laws of War—Example. 278. **LAW OF RIOT.** 279. **LAWS AND CUSTOMS OF WAR.**

277. The law of most foreign countries recognises an M.I. 17 intermediate stage between war and peace known by the name of the state of siege, under which the ordinary law is suspended for the time being, by proclamation, and the country is subordinated in whole or in part to military authority, but such a state of things cannot exist under English law, which never pre-supposes the possibility of civil war and makes no express provision for such contingencies.

Martial law *in the Home Territory*, as distinguished from Military law and the Martial law that forms part of the laws and customs of war in the *proper sense of the term*, means the suspension of ordinary law and the government of a country or part of it by military tribunals. It can only be established in the United Kingdom by an Act of Parliament, or in a self-governing British possession by an Act of the local legislature. In a British possession under the direct *legislative* authority of the Crown a proclamation of martial law by the Crown would be as effective as a Statute in the United Kingdom.

But in the time of invasion or rebellion, or in expectation thereof, exceptional powers are often assumed by the Crown, acting usually (though by no means necessarily) through its military forces,

for the suppression of hostilities or the maintenance of good order within its territories (whether the United Kingdom or British possessions). The expression 'martial law' is sometimes employed as a name for this common law right of the Crown and its servants to repel force by force, and to take such exceptional measures as may be necessary for the purpose of restoring peace and order.

When the exercise of martial law is not sanctioned by statute, the intention of the executive government to assume exceptional powers and to take exceptional measures for the suppression of hostilities and the maintenance of good order is generally announced by a 'proclamation of martial law.' Such a proclamation in the Home Territory operates only by way of warning that the government is about to resort, in a given district, to such forcible measures as may be necessary to repel invasion, or suppress insurrection, as the case may be. To obviate any question as to the legality of the measures thus taken, it is usual to pass an Imperial or local Act of Indemnity, for the protection of those engaged, so far as the steps taken by them have been reasonably necessary for the purpose, and carried out in good faith, and for the confirmation of the sentences passed by military courts. A subsequent Act of Indemnity is, of course, not required when the exercise of martial law has been sanctioned beforehand by statute.

Martial law, in a somewhat different sense, forms M. xiv a part of the laws and customs of war. Military necessity justifies a resort to all measures which are indispensable for securing the speedy submission of the enemy with the least possible loss of life and damage to property. Martial law consists of such rules as are adopted, at his own discretion, by a Commander-in-Chief in the field, supplementary, or wholly or partially superseding the laws ordinarily in force in a given district.

The presence of an invading army in a district

is of itself, without any special warning to the inhabitants, a sufficient proclamation that the martial law of that army is in force in that district.

Though martial law applies to all persons and to all property within the district over which it is in force, it is not usual for a British general, except in cases of urgent necessity, to deal with offences by his own troops otherwise than under the Army Act.

In treating certain acts as offences, and fixing the punishment that may be given to them, a general commanding should always be guided by the laws and customs of war as generally accepted.

Stringent measures may be taken to repress all attempts at interference with communications by road, railway, or telegraph, as also acts of marauding or assassination.

A general commanding may also deport from any place within its sphere of operations all persons whose presence therein is considered by him to be dangerous or inconvenient.

Punishment under martial law should as far as possible be inflicted only after inquiry by a military court, convened for the purpose, and no punishment should be inflicted after the termination of hostilities and when recourse can again be had to the ordinary courts of justice.

*Example.* In the year 1900 the greater part of South Africa was under martial law. The legislatures of Natal and Cape Colony passed Acts creating special courts for the trial and punishment, without juries, of persons charged with high treason and crimes of a political character. The jurisdiction of these courts, both in regard to time and the class of offences dealt with, was limited and eventually martial law was everywhere administered by military courts acting under detailed instructions.

The following principles were laid down. The persons subject to martial law were those within the

limits of the proclaimed districts who were not subject to military law under the Army Act.

No person was to be arrested or tried under martial law except for an offence committed within a proclaimed district, and since the date of the proclamation.

Ordinary common law offences, except such as rendered the offender liable to trial by military courts were, if practicable, to be dealt with before a magistrate under the ordinary law.

Minor breaches of martial law regulations were to be summarily treated by an authorised officer or magistrate, who could award a fine up to 10*l.* or imprisonment up to thirty days.

Treason, aiding or abetting the enemy, overt acts endangering the safety of H.M. Forces, and serious breaches of martial law regulations, were to be tried by military courts.

A military court, consisting of not less than three members, had unlimited powers, and, in addition to the punishments authorised by the Army Act, could award a fine, and order the removal of a convicted person from a proclaimed district. Sentences of death and penal servitude had to be confirmed by the General Commanding-in-Chief.

Instructions were issued that military courts were to conform as far as possible to the Rules of Military Law as laid down for courts-martial in the Manual of Military Law. The forms of general, district, and field general courts-martial were nearly always used.

The commandants of districts or areas were made responsible for the administration of martial law in the territory they controlled, but eventually special administrators of martial law were appointed for each area, who dealt solely with martial law regulations, and did not exercise any military command.

**278. LAW OF RIOT.**—The primary duty of preserving public order rests with the civil power, and in all countries keeping the peace is entrusted to a special body of men, called police, gendarmes, etc. The law which commands the suppression of unlawful assemblies, riots, and insurrections necessarily justifies the civil power in using force for their suppression. The difficulty is to ascertain what is the necessary degree of force, and the danger of making a mistake in the matter is serious, as any excess in the use of force constitutes a crime.

Occasions arise when the police of the civil power are incapable of preserving peace, and the aid of the soldier is called in. The regulations for the suppression of disturbances by the military power in foreign countries are clear and definite. In England it is otherwise. The instructions given to an officer entrusted with the duty of suppressing a riot are of the most meagre character. For any loss of life or limb caused by his acts he is liable to be criminally indicted, while for hesitation in acting, or forbearance, he is liable to trial both by civil and military courts. Soldiers, in fact, when acting in aid of the civil power, in no respect differ, in the view of the English law, from armed citizens. A great responsibility is thus thrown upon an officer in command of troops called out to suppress a riot. He has to remember that he is for the time being a policeman, and that he must exercise the temper and forbearance of those who are only allowed to use force as a last resort.

Deadly weapons should only be used against rioters who are committing or on the point of committing some felonious outrage which can only be stopped by armed force. As the civil power is primarily responsible for keeping the peace, an officer should always, if possible, place himself under the orders of a magistrate. Experience has shown that

it is advisable to keep the magistrate with the troops and not to lose sight of him. All orders as to firing on a mob, or charging, should be written down and signed by the magistrate, and not accepted verbally.

**279. LAWS AND CUSTOMS OF WAR.**—By the laws and customs of war are meant those principles and rules of conduct which govern the practice of civilised nations when engaged in hostilities. The laws of war on land derive their authority partly from usage but mainly from express international agreement. The diplomatic acts concerned are the Geneva Conventions of 1864 and 1906, the Declaration of St. Petersburg of 1868, the three Hague Declarations of 1899-1907, and the Hague Conventions of 1899-1907. The above Acts taken together afford an approximately complete statement of the international law of war on land.

A brief summary of the existing practice of civilised nations is here annexed.

*Lawful belligerents.*—Armed forces (including non-combatants) must be commanded by responsible person, wear something in the nature of a uniform, carry their arms openly, and conduct their operations in accordance with the laws and customs of war.

The above law is relaxed in favour of the *levée en masse* of the population of a territory that has not been occupied, but in any case arms must be carried openly.

*Prisoners of war.*—Prisoners of war must be humanely treated, properly maintained, and not placed under further restraint than is necessary to prevent them taking further part in the war. Their labour, if utilised, should be paid for, and have nothing to do with the military operations.

They are subject to the regulations and orders of the force into whose hands they have fallen, and

such regulations as may be necessary to prevent escape.

An individual return for each prisoner of war is to be kept by an 'Information Bureau,' and the agents of 'Relief Societies' are to be given every facility for the accomplishment of their humane task. They may be set at liberty *on parole*, but are bound scrupulously to fulfil the engagements made. The usual pledge given is not to serve during the existing war, but this only extends to active service in the field, and does not refer to internal service, such as recruiting or drilling recruits, fighting against other belligerents, or civil or diplomatic services. As a general rule a commanding officer has authority to give parole on behalf of himself and those under his command. A soldier, by English practice, can only give his parole through a commissioned officer. The violation of parole is punishable by death, but usually only strict and severe confinement is inflicted.

*The conduct of hostilities.*—No greater harm should be done to an enemy than necessity requires for the purpose of bringing him to terms. The use of poison, the treacherous killing of persons, and the refusal of quarter is prohibited. No arms, projectiles, or material that cause superfluous injury are to be used. Unless justified by the necessities of war, private property is not to be seized or destroyed, nor are undefended towns to be bombarded. In sieges or bombardments steps are to be taken to spare as far as possible edifices devoted to religion, art, science, and charity, as well as buildings covered by the Geneva flag. Pillage is strictly forbidden. Surprise or stratagem must not entail acts of treachery. Spies cannot claim to be treated as prisoners of war, but they must not be punished without trial.

*Reprisals* are admissible only in extreme cases where redress for the wrong or punishment of the

real offender is unattainable. They must be authorised by the Commander-in-Chief and must not be disproportional to the offence, or be of a barbarous character.

*The sick and wounded.*—All duly recognised mobile medical units are to be respected and protected, and the personnel employed in the collection, transport, and treatment of the wounded and sick are not to be treated as prisoners of war. The material and personnel of medical units that fall into the hands of an enemy may be utilised, but when their services are no longer wanted they should be sent back to their own army. Sick and wounded are to be cared for irrespective of nationality, and a record is to be kept as to their welfare and personal property. The emblem of the Geneva cross is not to be used by unauthorised persons or adopted as a trade mark, and any improper use of the Red Cross flag is to be severely punished.

*Property of enemy.*—All movable property of the State which may be of use in military operations may be taken possession of, but immovable property such as buildings, forests, etc., must be properly administered. Private property cannot be confiscated, and if private railway plant, telegraphs, etc., are used for war purposes, they must eventually be restored to their owners and compensation paid. Churches, schools, historical monuments, and works of art are to be treated as private property.

*Requisitions,* either in kind or services, for the needs of a force may be demanded on the authority of a military commander, and must be in proportion to the resources of the country. Supplies should either be paid for or a receipt given for what is taken. Contributions in money should not be levied without the direct order of a Commander-in-Chief.

*General population.*—The family honour, lives, religion and private property of the population of occupied territory must be respected. They cannot be compelled to take an oath of allegiance or take part in military operations against their own country. Their services may be utilised as guides, or they may be forced to give their labour for repairs to roads, bridges, etc.

*Neutral territory.*—A neutral state shall disarm and intern any of the forces of either belligerent that may cross its frontier, and shall supply the interned with the food, clothing and relief that may be necessary. Wounded and sick brought into neutral territory must remain under neutral control, but, by mutual agreement with the belligerents, the passage of sick and wounded through neutral territory may in special cases be allowed. At the conclusion of peace all expenses caused by the internment shall be made good.

*An armistice* is an arrangement for the suspension of hostilities for a limited time. It should be published in all places to which it relates, and during its continuance all equivocal acts of hostility should be abstained from. A cessation of hostilities for a temporary purpose is usually termed a *suspension of arms*.

*A capitulation* is an agreement for the surrender of a force or place on terms agreed upon by the respective commanders within the limits of their powers.

*A flag of truce* can only be used legitimately for the purpose of entering into some arrangement with the enemy. Firing during an engagement does not necessarily cease on the appearance of a flag of truce, but when the flag is to be refused admittance the bearer should be signalled to retire.

A *safe-conduct* is a document allowing of the passage of persons or goods through places in time of war where they could not otherwise go without danger. A *passport* usually applies only to the persons named therein.

A *safeguard* is a guard posted by a commanding officer for the purpose of protecting property or persons against the operations of his own troops.

## CHAPTER XXIX

*MISCELLANEOUS REGULATIONS*

280. REDRESS OF WRONGS. 281. RECORDING OFFENCES—Regimental Conduct Book—Company Conduct Book. 282. THE LAWS OF ENLISTMENT. 283. BILLETING AND IMPRESSION OF CARRIAGES.

**280. REDRESS OF WRONGS.**—If an officer thinks himself wronged by his commanding officer, and on due application to him does not receive the redress to which he may consider himself entitled, he may forward a complaint through the usual channel to the Army Council for submission to His Majesty. In the event of the commanding officer refusing or delaying unreasonably to forward the complaint it may be sent direct to the General in command, but the commanding officer should at the same time be apprised of the fact. S. 42

When a soldier has any complaint to make he S. 43 should ask a non-commissioned officer to take him before the captain of his company, and should then make his appeal in a temperate tone and with a respectful manner. If redress is not obtained from the captain, the soldier may ask that the case be referred to the commanding officer, and if satisfaction is not then forthcoming may further demand that his complaint be forwarded to the prescribed general or other officer.

Complaints must always be forwarded through the regular channel, except when a captain or commanding officer refuses or unnecessarily delays to forward the appeal. When a direct application is,

for the above cause, made, the captain or commanding officer passed over must be at once informed of the fact.

Officers and soldiers are, however, allowed to make a complaint direct to the inspecting officer at the K. 127 time of the annual general inspection.

**281. RECORDING OFFENCES.**—The offences committed by officers and soldiers are recorded in the following books :—

*Regimental conduct sheets.*—These will be kept as K. 1915 confidential documents in every unit and corps, for officers, therein serving, who have been convicted by court-martial. No entry will be made of any charge upon which a finding of ‘not guilty’ has been recorded.

*Regimental conduct sheets.*—These will be made out K. 1916 for every N.C. officer and man and those of N.C. officers of the rank of colour-sergeant and upwards will be kept as confidential documents. In the sheets are entered :—

1. *Every conviction by court-martial*, but no entry will be made of any charge upon which a finding of ‘not guilty’ has been recorded.

2. *Every case of desertion or fraudulent enlistment in which trial has been dispensed with.*

3. *Every conviction by the civil power* except (1) for offences committed prior to enlistment, (2) when the sentence is a fine (and the offender has not undergone imprisonment in default of payment), and an officer not below the rank of brigadier-general has ordered omission of the entry. The case in which a soldier is bound over to appear for judgment is also entered.

Convictions of offences committed in civil life while in a state of desertion are to be entered. Certified copies of all convictions by the civil power will be annexed to the sheets, and if imprisonment ex-

ceeding seven days has been awarded, the certified record will be produced in evidence at a trial as a former conviction. When the imprisonment is for seven days and under, it will be treated as an ordinary regimental entry.

4. *Every severe reprimand of a N.C. officer.*
5. *Every case of reduction of a N.C. officer to a lower grade, or to the ranks, or deprivation of a lance stripe, for an offence but not for inefficiency.*
6. *Every award of detention by the C.O.*
7. *Confinement to barracks exceeding seven days.*
8. *Every instance of drunkenness.*
9. *Punishment on board ship as shown in the table as equivalent to a regimental entry.*
10. *Every offence entailing forfeiture of pay except (a) for absence without leave not exceeding two days, (b) in the case of a civil conviction when a superior authority has directed omission of entry, (c) for offences committed before enlistment.*
11. *Punishments in military prisons or detention barracks.*
12. *Every conviction of Reservists under S. 6 R. F. Act.*
13. *Every admission to hospital on account of alcoholism.*
14. *Any especial act of gallantry or distinguished conduct will be entered in red ink and written right across the sheet.*

*Company conduct sheets.* These contain a record of K. 1921 every offence committed by N.C. officers and men for which punishment has been awarded, except offences (other than drunkenness or those involving forfeiture of pay) for which one day's C.B. or its equivalent punishment on board ship, or one extra guard, has been awarded. Admonition will not be entered except in cases of drunkenness, or in cases entailing a forfeiture of pay. Admission to hospital on account of drink will be entered in red ink.

**282. LAW OF ENLISTMENT.**—A person is deemed to S. 80 be enlisted upon signing the declaration in the attestation paper and taking the oath of allegiance.

A person may be enlisted, for a period not exceeding twelve years, to serve as a soldier either in the army (long service) or partly in the army and partly in the reserve (short service). The conditions of the original enlistment may be varied from time to time by regulation, and a soldier, with his assent, may be permitted to enter the reserve for the residue of his original enlistment, or to *extend* his army service instead of entering the reserve, or to re-enter upon army service after passing to the reserve.

In time of war, or when the reserve is called out S. 87 by proclamation, or when on service beyond the seas, a soldier who would otherwise be discharged may have his service *prolonged* for one year. Similarly, a soldier entitled to transfer to the reserve may in time of war be *detained* in army service for a year, and any soldier may in time of war agree to *continue* his army service until the end of the war.

A soldier in army service may after nine years be S. 84 allowed, under certain conditions, to *re-engage* so as to complete twenty-one years' army service, and in exceptional cases is allowed to *continue* in the service S. 85 beyond twenty-one years, subject to his right to demand discharge at three months' notice.

A soldier may be *transferred* from one corps to S. 83 another at any time, with his own consent. Transfers of soldiers to another corps of the same branch of service may be ordered (1) within three months of attestation if enlisted for general service; (2) when punishment for an offence has been commuted wholly or partially to general service; (3) when ordered home from abroad and more than two years of army service is unexpired; (4) when ordered abroad within two years of the expiration of army service; (5) when invalidated from abroad or medi- S. 89

cally unfit to go abroad. In the last two cases the soldier may be transferred to the reserve.

A soldier can only be *discharged* by sentence of S. 92 a court-martial or by order of a competent military authority, but a soldier within three months of his S. 81 attestation may obtain a discharge on payment of 10*l.*, or may apply for discharge on account of any error or illegality in his enlistment. After three S. 100 months' service the permission of the officer commanding is necessary, and the sum will be 18*l.* After twelve years' service a free discharge is granted.

A soldier is not liable to be taken out of the service S. 144 except on account of a charge of or conviction for crime; or for a debt that exceeds 30*l.*; or when a S. 96 civil court orders an apprentice or indentured labourer K. 390 to be given up; or when parish authorities claim a soldier in cases of wife desertion.

- 283. BILLETING AND IMPRESSMENT OF CAR-** K. 1383  
**RIAGE.**—Orders for the movement of troops in the United Kingdom are conveyed by means of 'routes.' On production of a *route*, the constable in charge S. 103 of any place shall *billet* on victualling houses the officers, soldiers, and horses mentioned in the route. S. 108 The billets, when made out by the constable, are delivered to the billeting party, which has usually preceded the unit on the march. The keeper of each victualling house has to furnish the food and S. 106 accommodation authorised, and is paid for the same the prices sanctioned by Parliament. Where directions have been given for embodying all or any part of the Territorial Force, and a state of emergency is proclaimed, the occupiers of all public buildings, dwelling houses, barns and stables, shall also be liable to billets.

Under an ordinary *route* the civil authorities may S. 112 be called on to provide such carriages, animals, and drivers as are required for moving the regimental baggage and stores.

Under a *requisition of emergency* can be demanded S. 115 carriages, and horses of every description, and barges and other vessels used in inland navigation, for the conveyance of persons as well as baggage. Whenever a proclamation ordering the Army Reserve to be called out on permanent service is in force, carriages (including motor cars and other locomotives), animals, and vessels may be purchased as well as hired on behalf of the Crown, and such carriages, animals, and vessels may, if not forthcoming or refused, be forcibly taken possession of. The procuring of transport on mobilisation may be assigned by the Army Council to County Associations. All troops on the march, with their horses, carriages, baggage, and prisoners, are exempt from tolls on roads, bridges, piers, and landing-places. Vessels employed on canals are only exempt from tolls when they are supplied under a requisition of emergency. S. 143

# INDEX

---

[*The crimes specified in the Army Act, which have not been made the subject of special comment, are to be found in Chapter XVIII., and are not referred to in the Index.*  
*The numbers refer to paragraphs and not pages. When paragraphs deal consecutively with a subject the first or leading one only is quoted. Information on any particular point will, as a rule, be found without consulting the Index, by referring to the heading of the chapter under which it would naturally fall, in the Table of Contents.]*

- ABSENCE, of president, 104, 139; of members, 80, 104, 139; of judge-advocate, 71; of prosecutor, 68, 104; of prisoner, 104, 190.  
— without leave, 39, 176; distinguished from desertion, 161, 177; finding of, when charged with desertion, 119, 167; punishment for, by commanding officer, 40, 43; evidence on oath as to, 36; court of inquiry on, 177, 274; of territorial and reserve, 179.
- Abstract of evidence, 81, 236.
- Accomplice, 231, 243, 253.
- Accused, *see* prisoner.
- Acquittal, 116, 118; a bar to second trial, 52, 95, 112; confirmation of, 136; remarks by confirming officer on, 146.
- Acting non-commissioned officer, reduction of, 48; arraignment of 129, 213.
- Addresses, 98, 101.
- Adjournment, 104, 115.
- Adjutant, 68, 120.
- Admissions, 257.
- Admonition, 44.
- Affirmation, 92, 233.
- Age, at attestation, 174.
- Aggravated drunkenness, 42, 186, 210.
- Alternate charges, 119, 216, 219.
- Amendment of charge, by president, 66; by convening officer, 80, 221; by court, 221; by special finding, 119; amending evidence, 238.
- Annual Act—Army, 8, 281.
- Annuities, forfeiture of, 168, 205, 206.
- Appeal to court-martial, 51, 115, 126.
- Application, for trial, 37, 75, 220; for attendance of witness, 225.
- Appointment, deprivation of, 48.
- Apprehension, of offenders, 19; of deserters, 170.
- Apprentice, 161.
- Army Act, 2, 9; Annual Act, 8; Discipline Act, 5, 17; orders, 15.  
— circulars, 14, 254.  
— reserve. *See* Reserve  
— schoolmaster, 194.

- Arraignment of prisoner, 93, 220.
- Arrest, 20, 229.
- Articles of war, 4, 10.
- Assembly of courts-martial, 75; delay in, 77; order for, 80; for revision, 139.
- Assisting, to desert, 164; to be absent, 179.
- Attempts, to commit an offence, 191; to desert, 119, 164.
- Attestation, false answer on, 174.
- Award, day of, 41; of punishment, 50; illegal, 50.
- BADGES**, good conduct, 168, 205, 206.
- Bail, doing duty while on, 61.
- Barracks, breaking out of, 39, 176; confinement to, 44, 278.
- Best evidence, 254.
- Billeting, 4, 9, 18, 59, 151, 283.
- Boards, 276.
- Books, regimental, 254, 278.
- Buying arms, etc., 151, 231.
- CAMP** followers, 18, 60.
- Captain, as president, 65; as convening officer, 78; as confirming officer, 137; gives evidence to character, 120; number of, on a general court-martial, 63.
- Carriages, impressment of, 4, 9, 18, 59, 151, 283.
- Cashiering, 145, 197, 212.
- Casting vote, 66, 116, 127.
- Certificate, medical, 125; of civil court, 254.
- Challenges, 86; grounds for, 91; voting on, 66, 87; of pro-secutor, 68; of member, 88; of president, 89; of judge-advocate, 71.
- Character, statement as to, 76; evidence as to, 101, 107, 121, 123, 253; questions affecting, 241, 279; of offences, 126; inquiry affecting, 273.
- Charges, 33, 214; reading out, 93; pleading to, 95; objection to, 94; sent to president, 66, 80; seen by prosecutor, 68; copy to prisoner, 81; explaining to prisoner, 105; promulgation of, 149; alternative charges, 119, 216, 218. *See* Amendment.
- Charge-sheet, 213, 222; arraignment on, 93; forwarded to convening officer, 76.
- Christmas day, 33, 82.
- Circumstantial evidence, 248, 254.
- Civil courts, 52, 61, 151, 180; Convictions, 122, 234, 254, 278; law, 3, 4, 61; offences, 59, 61, 145; prison, 202, 225.
- Civilians, 18, 60; as judge-advocate, 72; as witness, 225, 230; convictions of, 122; theft from, 183; contempt of court by, 190.
- Clearing court, 66.
- Closing court, 66, 71, 114, 125.
- Colony, forces of, 18; imprisonment in, 202; confirmation by governor of, 137.
- Combatants, 65.
- Command, lawful, 113; disobedience of lawful, 160.
- Commanding officer, 38; of detachment, 54; investiga-

- tion by, 33 ; trial of 64 ; conviction by, a bar to second trial, 52, 61, 96, 112 ; condonation by, 113 ; not a member, 64 ; as convening officer, 76 ; applying for trial, 37, 75, 76.
- Commencement of sentence, 128 ; of imprisonment, 41.
- Commission, altering date of, 198. *See Officer.*
- Committal, hour of, 41 ; committing authorities, 202.
- Commutation, 138, 148, 212.
- Company officers, 53 ; defaulters' book, 76, 278.
- Competency of witness, 231.
- Complaints, 277.
- Composition of courts, 63 ; of field general courts, 262 ; inquiry into, 84 ; objection to, 95.
- Compulsion, 113.
- Comrade, theft from, 183.
- Condonation, 95, 112, 113.
- Conduct, to prejudice, etc., 39, 191 ; of witnesses, remarks on, 133 ; court of inquiry on, 273.
- Confession, 258 ; of desertion and fraudulent enlistment, 165 ; record of, 254 ; forfeitures entailed by, 205, 206.
- Confinement, 29, 32 ; to barracks, 44, 278.
- Confirming, of courts-martial, 136 ; of acquittal, 118 ; of sentence on officer, 79, 145 ; of field general court-martial, 271 ; officer, 137 ; officer not a member, 64, 137 ; officer varies sentence or finding,
- 119, 138 ; effect of not confirming, 62, 136.
- Conspiracy, 220, 253.
- Constable, Lord High, 7 ; offences of, 151 ; serving summons, 226.
- Constitution. *See Composition.*
- Contempt of court, 189, 228, 233, 246.
- Convening officer, 78, 80 ; not a member, 64 ; appoints president, 80 ; appoints prosecutor, 68 ; as president at field general courts, 262, 270 ; of court, *see Court-martial.*
- Conviction, schedule of, 121, 122 ; evidence of, 234, 254 ; record of, 278 ; remains when finding is confirmed, 142 ; of cognate offences, 119 ; not twice for the same offence, 52, 95, 112 ; proofs of, by prosecutor, 101, 104 ; declaration of illegal absence counts as, 274.
- Copies, of proceedings, 74, 273 ; of documents, 134 ; of convictions, 121 ; of charges, 81 ; when admissible as evidence, 254, 255, 274.
- Corps of members, 64.
- Council, order in, 2, 16.
- Counsel, 279 ; as prosecutor, 70, 234 ; as judge-advocate, 72 ; for defence, 109 ; address by, 103 ; officer acting as, 279.
- Court, of chivalry, 6 ; of inquest, 275 ; of inquiry, 273, 34, 64, 254 ; of law, *see Civil Courts.*

- Court-martial, 55 ; composition, 63 ; formation, 67 ; corps of officers, 64, 80 ; dress of officers, 82 ; president, 65 ; assembly, 75 ; application for, 37, 76 ; appeal to, 51 ; convening authority, 37, 78, 79 ; swearing in, 92 ; duty of, 84 ; closing court, 114, 125 ; confirmation of proceedings, 136 ; revision by, 139 ; proceedings as evidence, 254 ; on board ship, 57 ; field general courts, 260 ; contempt of court, 190, 228, 233, 246 ; proceedings, 134, 149, 254 ; books, 281.
- Credibility of witness, 232, 241, 245, 254, 279.
- Crimes, 153 ; punishments, 152 ; crime, as charge, 30, 36 ; criminating answer, 243 ; criminal intent, 113, 251.
- Cross-examination, 241.
- Custody, military, 19 ; after eight days, 77 ; resisting, 39 ; taking deserter into, 165, 170 ; of proceedings, 66, 73, 135.
- Customs of war, 279.
- Damages, 61, 208.
- Day, 43.
- Death, 200 ; of president, 67 ; sentence of, 127, 270, 271 ; confirmation of sentence, 145, 271 ; commutation of sentence, 212 ; presumption as to, 251 ; hearsay evidence as to, 255.
- Debt, 61.
- Declaration, 233 ; dying, 255.
- Decorations, 121, 198, 205, 206.
- Deductions, 46, 208, 209.
- Defaulters' books, 281.
- Defence, 109 ; supplementing, 66, 73 ; warning prisoner, 81 ; record of, 102 ; prisoner's witnesses for, 234, 235, 237.
- Deferred pay, 205, 206.
- Delay, in assembling a court, 77 ; in forwarding a complaint, 277.
- Delegated warrant, 79.
- Deliberation, on finding, 115.
- Depositions, 255.
- Deprivation of pay, 43, 278 ; of rank, 48, 198 ; of appointment, 48.
- Descriptive return, 170, 254.
- Desertion, 161 ; convictions while in a state of, 122 ; forfeitures incident on, 205, 206 ; commutation of punishment for, 212 ; evidence to prove, 253.
- Detention, 40. *See Imprisonment.*
- Direct evidence, 248.
- Discharge with ignominy, 203 ; forfeitures incident on, 206 ; subsequent enlistment of discharged man, 175 ; prisoner though discharged liable to military law, 58 ; forfeiture of service towards discharge, 169 ; evidence as to discharge documents, 254.
- Disgraceful conduct, 183 ; forfeitures incident on, 206.

- Dismissal of officer, 145, 197 ; of warrant officer, 194.
- Disobedience, of lawful command, 160 ; of summons, 228.
- District court-martial. *See Courts-martial.*
- Documents, 225, 248, 254. *See Copies.*
- Drunkenness, 39, 42, 184 ; inquiry into previous cases, 121.
- Dying declarations, 255.
- EARL MARSHAL**, 7.
- Elections, 176.
- Embezzlement, 119, 182, 250.
- Enlistment, 9, 59 ; convictions before, 122 ; improper enlistment, 171, 174, 175 ; evidence of, 254 ; laws, 282.
- Equipment, loss of, 39, 189, 274 ; stoppages for loss of, 208 ; charges for loss of, 216 ; evidence as to loss, to prove desertion, 253 ; purchasing, 151, 231.
- Escort, resisting, 39.
- Evidence, 247 ; before a commanding officer, 36 ; in support of pleas, 95 ; order in which taken, 101 ; rebutting evidence, 104 ; taken on plea of guilty, 107 ; as to character, 107, 121 ; on revision, 139 ; how elicited and recorded, 242 ; examination of witnesses, 239.
- Execution of office, 158.
- Exemplary conduct, barring trial, 58.
- Exemption from summons, 227.
- Expenses of witnesses, 230.
- Experts, 256.
- FALSE**, answer on attestation, 174 ; statement as to desertion, etc., 165 ; accusations, 111 ; evidence, 190, 256.
- Felony, 183, 206, 244.
- Field, general court-martial, 260 ; punishment, 210 ; officer, 64, 65, 137.
- Finding, 105, 114 ; dissolution before, 62 ; recalling witnesses before, 238 ; voting on, 116 ; special, 119 ; confirmation of, 136, 142 ; revised, 139 ; of insanity, 142 ; non-confirmation of, 143 ; partial confirmation of, 144 ; promulgation of, 118, 149 ; on separate charge-sheets, 222.
- Fines, 207 ; for drunkenness, 42 ; under 30*l.*, 61.
- Forfeitures, 45, 168, 198, 205, 206, 209 ; restoration of forfeited service, 132.
- Framing charges, 216. *See Charges.*
- Fraudulent enlistment, 170 ; in another regiment, 166 ; forfeitures consequent on conviction, 205, 206 ; commutation of punishment for, 212 ; fraudulent misapplying, 119, 182.
- Furlough, desertion on, 163 ; extension of, 176.
- GENERAL**, officer as president, 65 ; orders, 14 ; court-martial, *see Court-martial* ; service, 212.
- Good-conduct badges, 44, 169, 205, 206.

Good Friday, 33, 82.  
 Gratuities, 169, 205, 206.  
 Guard, 29-32.  
 Guilty, 95, 105, 117, 118.

**HALF-PAY**, 18.  
 Handwriting, 254, 256.  
 Hearsay evidence, 255.  
 Homicide Act, 192.  
 Honourable acquittal, 118.  
 Horse, ill-treating, 39.  
 Hour, of commencement of imprisonment, 41 ; of sitting of a court, 82.  
 Husband as witness, 231, 243.

**IGNOMINY**. *See* Discharge.  
 Ignorance, no excuse, 113, 251.

Illegal absence, court on, 274.  
 Illness, of president, 67 ; of member, 67, 80 ; of judge-advocate, 71 ; of prisoner, 82.

Impression of carriages, 4, 9, 18, 55, 151, 283.

Imprisonment and Detention, 202 ; amount of, 126 ; by commanding officer, 40, 41 ; prisoner subject to military law during, 58 ; wording of sentence of, 129 ; commencement of, 41, 128 ; duration of, 128 ; commutation of, 212 ; exceeding six months, 206 ; day of expiration of sentence of, 202 ; record of, 278.

Indentured labourer, 61.  
 Indian, forces, 18, 60 ; articles of war, 10 ; officers sitting

on courts, 64 ; imprisonment in India, 202.  
 Informality in proceedings, 140, 148.  
 Injury, to property, 39, 208 ; to soldier, 273.  
 Inquest, court of, 275.  
 Inquiry, court of, 273 ; when courts-martial assemble, 66, 84.  
 Insanity, 113, 119, 142.  
 Insubordination, 156, 159.  
 Intention of deserting, 161 ; criminal intent, 113, 251.  
 Investigation of charges, 33 ; investigating officer not a member, 64.  
 Irregularity in proceedings, 140, 148 ; in appointing judge-advocate, 71.  
 Irrelevant question, 241.  
 Issue, points at, 253.  
  
**JOINT-TRIAL**, 93, 101, 131, 220, 231.  
 Judge-advocate, 71 ; president acting as, 66 ; counsel acting as, 279 ; detailed by name, 80 ; warrant for, 79 ; not the prosecutor, 68 ; cannot be challenged, 90 ; summing up by, 101, 104 ; helping prisoner, 110 ; in closed court, 114 ; signs proceedings, 128, 134 ; keeps and transmits proceedings, 134, 135 ; judge-advocate general, 74.  
 Jurisdiction, of commanding officer, 39 ; of courts-martial, 56 ; objection to, 94 ; of field general courts, 260 ; as to drunkenness, 187.

- KING's evidence, 243; regulations, 2, 12, 254.  
 King's pardon, 148.  
 Kit. *See Equipment.*
- LABOURER, indentured, 61.  
 Lance rank, 48, 129, 138, 213.  
 Larceny, 182.  
 Law, civil and military, 1, 2, 3; martial, 281; of riot, 280; lawyer as judge-advocate general, 74; as judge-advocate, 72.  
 Lawful command, 113, 160.  
 Leading questions, 240.  
 Legal adviser, 73, 109.  
 Legal minimum of officers, 63, 67, 80.  
 Letters, 251, 254.  
 Liabilities of soldier for debt, 61; for wife, 209.  
 Limitation of time for trial, 58, 206.  
 Line of march, 29, 65.  
 Locality, of crime, 57; in charge, 216.  
 Loss, stoppage for, 208. *See Equipment.*
- MAJORITY, of votes, 87, 116, 272. *See Votes.*  
 Making away with. *See Equipment; Medals.*  
 Malice, 251.  
 Malingering, 183.  
 Manslaughter, 59, 250, 251.  
 Marines, 18, 64, 74, 137.  
 Martial law, 277.  
 Master, of apprentice, 61; school, 194.  
 Medals, inquiry as to, 121, 124; making away with, 189; forfeiture of, 169, 205.
- 206; forfeiture of officer's, 124, 198; boards on, 275.  
 Medical examination of prisoners, 85.  
 Members of court-martial, number of, 63; absence of, 80, 104, 139; qualification, 64; rank, 64; not a prosecutor, 68; in waiting, 80; names read over, 85; acting as interpreter, 88; as witness, 235; not give evidence to character, 120; of field general court-martial, 262.
- Memoranda, 240.  
 Memory, refreshing, 240.  
 Mercy, recommendation to, 132.  
 Military code, 7; command, 160; convicts, 201; courts, *see Courts-martial*; custody, 19, 165, 170, 202; decorations, 124, 198, 205, 206; law, 1, 4; prisons, 202; witness, 225.  
 Minimum, legal, of officers, 63, 67, 80.  
 Minor offences, 29, 35, 36, 48, 215; punishments, 46.  
 Misfortune, 112, 113.  
 Mitigation, statement in, 107; of sentence, 138, 140, 148.  
 Money, loss of 208, 216.  
 Month, 202.  
 Murder, 59, 250, 251.  
 Mutiny, 155; Act, 5.
- NAME, of prisoner, 213; president and judge-advocate appointed by, 80.  
 Native of India, 10, 18.

- Navy, 57, 64, 171, 174, 175.  
 Necessaries. *See Equipment.*  
 Neglect of orders, 39; culpable, 251.  
 New trial, 52, 142, 147.  
 Non-commissioned officer, 25; charge against, 35; before commanding officer, 48; before court-martial, 60, 204; trial on board ship, 57, 137; serving summons, 226; in execution of office, 158.  
 Notes, referring to, 240.  
 Not guilty, 95, 97, 118.
- OATH, of court, 92; of prosecutor, 68; of witness, 232; administration of, 66, 73.
- Offences, 59; time and place of, 57, 58; character of, 126; disposal by commanding officer, 37; punishment for, 193; field punishment for, 210; repeated offences, 169, 173; cognate offences, 119; statement of, 214; separate charge-sheets for, 222; persons committing, 60.
- Offer of violence, 158.
- Officer, charge against, 34; triable by general court-martial, 60; sentence on, 145; punishment, 194, 196; number composing court, 63; as prosecutor, 68; as counsel, 109; in execution of office, 158; arrest of, 21; commanding, 38; convening, 78, 80; confirming, 137; lawful command of, 160; in waiting,
- 80; court-martial, book of, 281. *See Warrant; Commanding.*
- Onus probandi*, 251.
- Opinion, 256, 273.
- Oral, evidence, 242, 248; statement, 103, 279.
- Order, neglect of, 39; disobedience to, 160; assembling court, 80; of addresses, 101; in council, 7, 16; lawful order, 160.
- Ordinances, 5.
- Original proceedings, 134; care of, 149; of attestation, 174.
- PARDON, 148. *See Condonation.*
- Particulars of charge, 214, 216.
- Pawning. *See Equipment.*
- Pay, deprivation of, 43, 278; stoppages, 46, 209; forfeiture of, 45, 206; sergeants, 182, 208.
- Penal servitude, 201; necessitates discharge, 203; confirmation of sentence, 145; commutation of, 212; forfeiture on conviction, 206; convict subject to military law, 58.
- Penal stoppages, 209.
- Penalties, on conviction, 168, 206; on finding, 142; on sentence of penal servitude, 203, 206; on sentence of imprisonment, 204, 206, 212.
- Pension, evidence as to, 121; forfeiture of, 169, 205, 206.
- Pensioners, 18.
- Peremptory punishment, 193.
- Perjury, 190, 254, 256.

- Personation, 151.  
 Persons subject to military law, 18, 60.  
 Persuading to desert, 164.  
 Plea, 112, 113; in bar of trial, 95; to charge, 96; not guilty, 97; guilty, 105; partly guilty, 108.  
 Points at issue, 253.  
 Powers, of commanding officer, 39; of courts-martial, 194, 260, 271.  
 Preamble to Mutiny Act, 5; to Annual Act, 8.  
 Prerogative, royal, 5.  
 Preservation of proceedings, 74, 149.  
 President, qualification and duties, 65, 66, 82, 228; charge sent to, 66, 80; absence of, 104; detailed by name, 80; name read over, 85; objection to, 87, 89; helping prisoner, 110; vote on finding, 116; vote on sentence, 127; signs and forwards proceedings, 118, 128, 134.  
 Presumptions, 251.  
 Previous convictions. *See* Convictions.  
 Prisoner, warning of, 81; arraignment of, 93; challenge by, 86; explanation of charge to, 81, 105; charge read to, 93; jointly charged, 93, 220; objects to charge, 95; plea, 95; description of, in charge, 213; prisoner's friend or counsel, 109, 279; address of, 100; statement of, 103, 105, 106, 109, 279; defence of, 109; warning to, 105; has the last word, 104; witnesses of, 237; not a competent witness, 231; contempt of court by, 190; court of inquiry on, 273; absence of, 190; trial of several, 220.  
 Private documents, 254.  
 Privilege from arrest, 27, 229; of prosecutor, 68; as to answering, 243; of courts of inquiry, 273.  
 Procedure, rules of, 2, 9, 11; advice as to, 73; of field general courts-martial, 263; as to deserters, 165, 170.  
 Proceedings, preliminary, 75; original, 134; record of and forwarding, 66, 73, 134; before sentence, 120; signing of, 118, 128; reading over, 85; irregularity in, 140, 148; correction of record, 150; care of, 74, 149; loss of, 151; on revision, 139; promulgation of, 149; as evidence, 254; of courts of inquiry, 273, 274. *See* Amendment: Court-martial.  
 Promotion, not recommending for, 48; of officer during trial, 82.  
 Promulgation, 149.  
 Proof, facts not requiring, 249; facts requiring, 250; burden of, 251; of desecration, 166, 177.  
 Property, injury to, 39, 208.  
 Prosecutor, 68, 70; not a member, 64; not interpreter, 88; cannot sit on field general courts, 262; cannot

- be challenged, 90 ; address of, 99 ; giving evidence to character, 120 ; giving evidence to former convictions, 234 ; as witness, 234 ; witnesses called by, 236 ; recalling witnesses, 104, 238.
- Provost-marshal, 79, 195, 260, 262.
- Provost-prison, 29, 202.
- Public documents, 254.
- Punishment by commanding officer, 40 ; by court-martial, 126, 193, 270 ; summary punishment, 210 ; scale of, 194 ; combination of, 211 ; commutation of, 212.
- Purchase of necessities, 231.
- QUALIFICATION**, of members, 64 ; of president, 65 ; of prosecutor, 68 ; of judge-advocate, 71.
- Quashing proceedings, 148.
- Questions, leading, 240 ; irrelevant and degrading, 241 ; mode of putting, 242.
- RANK**, resignation of, 48 ; of members, 63, 64 ; of president, 65, 262 ; of convening officer, 78 ; seating by, 82 ; voting by, 116 ; evidence as to, 121 ; forfeiture of, 198 ; reduction to ranks, 204 ; honorary, 65, 198.
- Rape, 59.
- Recalling witnesses, 238 ; by prosecutor, 104 ; by court, 115.
- Recommendation, to mercy, 132, 149 ; of restoration of service, 132, 168.
- Record, of proceedings, 66, 73, 74, 149 ; of addresses, 102 ; of trial erased, 140 ; of illegal absence, 177, 274 ; of all offences, 281 ; of previous convictions, 121 ; as evidence, 254.
- Redress of wrongs, 28, 280.
- Reduction of N. C. officer, 204, 281 ; of warrant officer, 194.
- Re-examination, 238, 239.
- Regimental books, 281 ; property, 39 ; necessaries, *see* Equipment ; courts-martial, *see* Court-martial.
- Regular forces, 18.
- Relative rank, 64, 65.
- Release of prisoner, 24, 32.
- Relevancy, rule of, 240, 253.
- Religion, scruples as to, 160.
- Remission of sentence, 138, 140, 142, 148.
- Reply, of witnesses, 242, 243, 244 ; of prosecutor, 101 ; evidence in, 104, 238.
- Reporters, 73.
- Reprimand, of officer, 199 ; of non-commissioned officer, 48.
- Reserve, 18, 58, 152 ; desertion from, 162, 164, 165 ; absence from, 177, 179 ; fraudulent enlistment of, 171 ; false attestation of, 174 ; improper enlistment of, 206 ; trial of, 61, 180 ; punishment of, 152, 206 ; notices to, 254 ; Force Act, 17 ; special, 18.
- Res gestae*, 255.
- Resignation of rank, 48.
- Resistance to custody, 19, 39.

- Restitution of stolen property, 138.
- Restoration of service, 132, 168.
- Revision, 139, 118, 128.
- Riot, law of, 278.
- Royal Navy, 57, 64, 171, 174; prerogative, 5; warrants, 7, 13, 79, 254.
- Rules, of evidence, 252; of procedure, 2, 9, 11.
- SAFEGUARD**, 154.
- Scale, of punishments, 194; of fines, 42.
- Scandalous conduct, 181, 193.
- School, absence from, 39; master, 194.
- Sea, trial at, 57, 65, 137.
- Seat of members, 66, 82; of prisoner, 84.
- Second trial, 62, 147.
- Secretary of State, circular by, 14; warrants by, 15.
- Sedition, 59, 157.
- Selling. *See Equipment; Medals.*
- Seniority, forfeiture of, 198.
- Sentence, 126; dissolution before, 62; execution of, 195; amount of, 150, 193, 271; confirmation of, 136, 144; 271; non-confirmation of, 142; revision of, 139; remarks of confirming officer on, 146; on officers, 145, 194; on warrant officers, 194; on non-commissioned officers, 204.
- Service, of officers, 63, 262; forfeiture of, 168, 171, 205; restoration of, 132, 168; evidence as to, 121, 254; evad-
- ing foreign, 161; general service in commutation, 168, 212.
- Ship, trial on board, 57, 65, 137.
- Shorthand writer, 73.
- Signing proceedings, 66, 73, 139.
- Simple drunkenness, 42, 184.
- Sitting of court-martial, 82. *See Court-martial.*
- Special finding, 119, 138, 167.
- Statement, by prisoner, 103, 105, 106, 107, 109, 279; as to character, 76; of offence, 214; cross-examination on previous, 241.
- Stealing, 119, 182, 183, 250, 251.
- Stoppages, by commanding officer, 45; by court-martial, 208, 209.
- Striking superior, 158.
- Subaltern, 64, 65.
- Summary of evidence, 34, 36; sent to president, 66, 80; sent to convening officer, 76; laid before court, 82; reading of, 107; compared with evidence, 66, 110, 255; witness not included in, 236; how far admissible as evidence, 255; dispensed with, 263.
- Sunday, 33, 82.
- Superior, command of, 113, 160; violence to, 158.
- Suspension of rank, 194; of sentence, 138; of rules, 263.
- Swearing. *See Oath.*
- TERRITORIAL FORCE**, 18, 58, 61, 64, 152; desertion from

- |  |   |
|--|---|
| <p>162 ; illegal enlistment, 174 ; absence from, 177 ; trial by Civil Court, 180.</p> <p>Theft, 59, 183, 251.</p> <p>Threatening language, 159.</p> <p>Time reckoning, 41, 202 ; barring trial, 58, 161, 171 ; specified in charge, 215.</p> <p>Treason, 59.</p> <p>Trial, on board ship, 57, 65, 137 ; second, 52, 62 ; joint, 93, 101, 131, 220, 231 ; plea in bar of, 96 ; claim for separate, 93 ; record of, corrected, 140, 148 ; commencement of, 82 ; by civil court, 52, 61, 151, 152, 180 ; of several prisoners, 92.</p> <p>Troop-ship. <i>See</i> Ship.</p> <p><b>UNLAWFUL</b>, act, 113, 251 ; purchase of necessaries, 231.</p> <p><b>VIEW</b>, adjournment for, 105.</p> <p>Violence to superior, 158.</p> <p>Volunteer. <i>See</i> Territorial.</p> <p>Votes, collecting, 66 ; casting, 66, 116, 127 ; on challenge,</p> | <p>87 ; on pleas, 95 ; on finding, 116 ; on sentence, 127, 272 ; at elections, 176.</p> <p><b>WARRANT</b>, 79 ; royal, 7, 13 ; of Secretary of State, 15 ; evidence of, 254 ; officer, 35, 49, 60, 65, 194.</p> <p>Wife, 231, 243.</p> <p>Witness, 224 ; list of, 76, 81 ; prosecutor as, 68, 234 ; judge-advocate as, 71 ; for prosecution not a member, 64, 235, 262 ; calling of, by president, 66 ; calling of, by judge-advocate, 73 ; calling of, by court, 115 ; calling of, by convening officer, 80 ; order in which examined, 101, 104 ; one sufficient, 254.</p> <p>Writing, of proceedings, 66, 73, 242 ; contempt of court certified in, 190, 228.</p> <p>Wrongs, redress of, 28, 280.</p> <p><b>YEOMANRY</b>. <i>See</i> Territorial Force.</p> |
|--|---|

**ON WAR,**  
BY  
**GEN. CARL VON CLAUSEWITZ,**  
TRANSLATED BY  
**COLONEL J. J. GRAHAM.**

---

**New and Revised Edition.**

---

WITH INTRODUCTION AND NOTES BY  
**COLONEL F. N. MAUDE, C.B. (Late R.E.).**

---

**IN THREE VOLUMES, Demy 8vo,**  
**Price 21s. Net.**

---

**The Campaign of Santiago de Cuba.**

By HERBERT H. SARGENT, Captain Second Cavalry, United States Volunteer Infantry, during Spanish-American War; Lieutenant-Colonel Twenty-Ninth United States Volunteer Infantry, operations in the Philippines, etc. Author of "Napoleon Bonaparte's First Campaign," and "The Campaign of Marengo." Large Crown 8vo, with Maps. In three volumes. Price 21s. net.

"Admirable volumes. . . . No other work has surveyed the whole field of strife in a more impartial or comprehensive manner. . . . Colonel Sergent's volumes are both of interest and value."—*The Times*.

"It is concise, faithful, and distinguished throughout by a wise restraint. It is not a story of the war, but a serious attempt at military history; and as such, we think, worthy of a place upon the shelves of military students in this country."—*The Standard*.

# **The Wolseley Series.**

Edited by COLONEL JAMES, R.E. Each Volume prefaces by a letter from Field-Marshal the RT. HON. VISCOUNT WOLSELEY, K.P., G.C.B., &c. Uniform.  
Demy 8vo.

**Vol. 1. With the Royal Headquarters in 1870-71.**

By General VON VERDY DU VERNOIS. With portrait of the Author and Map. 1s. 6d.

**Vol. 2. Letters on Strategy.** By Prince KRAFT ZU HOHENLOHE INGELFINGEN. With 5 Maps and Plans. Two Volumes. £1 10s.

**Vol. 3. Indian Frontier Warfare.** By Colonel G. J. YOUNGHUSBAND. With 7 Maps. 10s. 6d.

**Vol. 4. The Conduct of War.** By Lieut.-Gen. VON DER GOLTZ. 10s. 6d.

**Vol. 5. Cromwell as a Soldier.** By Lieut.-Col. T. S. Baldock, R.A. With 11 Maps and Plans. 15s.

**Vol. 6. Operations of General Gourko's Advance Guard in 1877.** By Colonel EPAUCHIN. 10s. 6d.

**Vol. 7. Napoleon as a General.** By Count YORCK VON WARTENBURG. 2 Vols. £1 10s.

PRINTED BY  
THE EAST OF ENGLAND PRINTING WORKS,  
LONDON AND NORWICH.





Princeton University Library



32101 055466799

ବିଜ୍ଞାନ